

如シ、

The winds AND the waves are absent there.

此文句ニ在テ winds 及 waves ノ二語ハ are ナル語ニ對シテ同一ノ關係ヲ有ス、即ハチ  
兩ナガラ働詞ノ主トナレリ、故ニ文中ニ此二語ヲ接續スル接續詞 and ハ同格接續詞ナリ  
トス、

第二、 文句中ノ他ノ語ニ對シテ同一ノ文法的關係ヲ有スル熟語數個ヲ連結スルノ例左  
ノ如シ、

The boy is always running down to the river OR in to the woods.

此文句ニ在テ to the river 及 into the woods ナル二個ノ熟語ハ is running ナル働詞ニ  
對シテ同一ノ關係ヲ有ス(此等ノ熟語ハ其働詞ノ意義ヲ變形スル副詞狀熟語ナリ)、故ニ  
OR ナル語ハ即ハチ一個ノ同格接續詞ナリ、

第三、 命題ヲ連接スルノ例左ノ如シ、

[He chid their wandering] BUT [relieved their pain]

此文句中ニ But ナリテ連結セラレタル二個ノ命題ハ共ニ獨立ノ命題ナリ、故ニ此 But ハ  
一ノ同格接續詞ナリ、

第百六十九節 同格接續詞ノ主タル者左ノ如シ、

and neither either wheeher

but nor or both

第百七十節 對立接續詞 Correlatives. 二個常ニ相並ンデ用井ラル、接續

詞アリテ、之ヲ對立接續詞ト云フ、即ハチ次ノ如シ、

Both—and. 其例次ノ如シ、

It is both yours and mine.

Either—or. 其例次ノ如シ、

He is either a knave or a fool.

Neither—nor. 其例次ノ如シ、

Neither the horse nor the carriage was injured.

Whether—or. 其例次ノ如シ、

It matters little whether I go or stay.

第百七十一節 附屬接續詞トハ主要命題ト羈屬命題トヲ連接スルニ

用フル者ナリ、

附屬接續詞ハ決シテ語ト語ヲ連結スルコトナシ、

IF we cannot remove pain, We may alleviate it

I fled BECAUSE I was afraid.

第百七十二節 附屬接續詞ノ主タル者左ノ如シ、

如シ、

The winds AND the waves are absent there.

此文句ニ在テ winds 及ビ waves ノ二語ハ are ナル語ニ對シテ同一ノ關係ヲ有ス、即ハチ  
両ナガラ働詞ノ主トナレリ、故ニ文中ニ此二語ヲ接續スル接續詞 and ハ同格接續詞ナリ  
トス、

第二、 文句中ノ他ノ語ニ對シテ同一ノ文法的關係ヲ有スル熟語數個ヲ連結スルノ例左  
ノ如シ、

The boy is always running down to the river OR in to the woods.

此文句ニ在テ to the river 及ビ into the woods ナル二個ノ熟語ハ is running ナル働詞ニ  
對シテ同一ノ關係ヲ有ス(此等ノ熟語ハ其働詞ノ意義ヲ變形スル副詞狀熟語ナリ)、故ニ  
OR ナル語ハ即ハチ一個ノ同格接續詞ナリ、

第三、 命題ヲ連接スルノ例左ノ如シ、

[He chid their wandering] BUT [velieved their pain]

此文句中ニ But ナ以テ連結セラレタル二個ノ命題ハ共ニ獨立ノ命題ナリ、故ニ此 But ハ  
一ノ同格接續詞ナリ、

第百六十九節 同格接續詞ノ主タル者左ノ如シ、

and neither either whether

but nor or both

第百七十節 對立接續詞 Correlatives. 二個常ニ相並ンデ用井ラル、接續

詞アリテ、之ヲ對立接續詞ト云フ、即ハチ次ノ如シ、

Both—and. 其例次ノ如シ、

It is both yours and mine.

Either—or. 其例次ノ如シ、

He is either a knave or a fool.

Neither—nor. 其例次ノ如シ、

Neither the horse nor the carriage was injured.

Whether—or. 其例次ノ如シ、

It matters little whether I go or stay.

第百七十一節 附屬接續詞トハ主要命題ト羈屬命題トヲ連接スルニ

用フル者ナリ、

附屬接續詞ハ決シテ語ヲ連結スルコトナシ、

IF we cannot remove pain, We may alleviate it

I fled BECAUSE I was afraid.

第百七十二節 附屬接續詞ノ主タル者左ノ如シ、

that	though	for
if	although	until
lest	after	because
unless	before	except
notwithstanding	since	

練習第九

次ノ句中ヨリ接續詞ヲ抽出シ、之ガ種類ヲ分カテ、

- 第一、 Take heed lest ye fall.   
 [落チザル様注意セヨ]
- 第二、 I have cut my finger, therefore I cannot write.   
 [余ハ指ヲ切リタル故ニ書メズ能ハズ]
- 第三、 I fear I shall fail, but I shall make the attempt.   
 [余ハ失策セムヲ恐ルベシトモ其企テナスベシ]
- 第四、 I shall make the attempt, though I fear that I shall fail.   
 [余ハ失策オンテテ恐ルベシトモ其企テナスベシ]
- 第五、 He speaks so low that he cannot be heard.

〔彼ハ聞コヒザル程ニ低語ス〕

第六、 Remain where you are till I return.

〔余ハ歸ルマデ其處ニ止ム〕

第七、 He will neither come nor send an apology.

〔彼ハ來ラズ又タ謝辭ヲ贈ラザラン〕

第八、 It is as cold as Ice land.

〔其處ハ氷洲ノ如ク寒シ〕

第九、 I know not whether to go or to remain.

〔余ハ行クニキヤ止ルニキヤチ知ラズ〕

第十、 Ask James if he is ready; and if he is ready, tell him to follow as quickly as he can,   
 [「ゼーナム」ニ準備成リタルヤ否ヲ問フ。若シ準備終リタルニ成ルニ速ニ從フベシト語ル]

第十一、 He did not deserve to succeed; for he made no effort, and showed no interest.   
 [彼ノ成功セザル當然ノ事ナリ。何ナニハ彼ハ一モ盡力セズ又一モ心ヲ傾テザリシ故]

第十二、 I shall not go unless you call me, nor will I remain if I can avoid it,   
 [故ニ汝ガ呼ビニ非ズニハ余ハ行カザルベシ。又タ余ハ去リテ居ルニテ從フベシトモ]

第十三、 I can wonder at nothing more than how a man can be idle; but of all

others a scholar.

〔余ハ最モ意情ニ安ニスルヲ驚ロン、就中學生ニシテ意情ナル更ニ驚ク所〕

第十四、The precise era of the invention and application of gunpowder is involved in doubtful traditions and equivocal language; yet we may clearly discern that it was known before the middle of the fourteenth century; and that before the end of the same the use of artillery in battles and sieges, by sea and land, was familiar to the states of Germany, Italy, Spain, France, and England.

〔火藥ヲ發明シ又タ之ヲ實用ニ供シタル精確ノ年代ハ、口碑ニモ殘リ方音ニモ存スベキ、曖昧トシテ甚ク疑フベシ。然レドモ其年代ハ第十四世紀ノ中年前ニ在リシコト、及ヒ該世紀ノ末年頃ニ、日耳曼、伊太利、西班牙、佛朗西、及英倫諸國ガ已ニ海陸ノ戰爭國城ニ大砲ヲ使用シタルヲ明言スルヲ得ベシ〕

第十五、Whether he was combined

With those of Norway; or did line the rebel

With hidden help and vantage; or that with doth

He labor'd in his country's wrack, I know not.

〔彼ハ那威ノ人民ニ聯合セシヤ、又タ隱密ノ幫助ト利益トヲ與ヘテ叛人ヲ助勢セシヤ、將タ又々此兩種ノ兵ヲ率ヒテ以テ自國ノ亡滅ヲ來タサントセシヤ、余之ヲ知ラザルナリ〕

### 間投詞

第七十三節 定義。間投詞トハ心ノ感動ヲ表示スルノ語ナリ、然レドモ文句ノ構造ニ干渉スル者ニ非ラズ、例之ヘバ、*Oh! Ah! Alas! Hurrah!* 如キ是レナリ、

注、間投詞ニ關シテ言フベキコトハ文詞論中ニ示スベシ

### 副詞、前置詞、及接續詞之概覽

甲……………表

第一……………副詞

種別	}	單純副詞、
		接續副詞、
		疑問副詞、
		疑作副詞、

文法的式樣——比較、

第二……………前置詞

文法的式樣——無、

第三……………接續詞

種別 } 同格接續詞、  
附屬接續詞、 文法的式樣——無、

乙.....分拆

- 第一 副詞.....定義
- 第二 副詞之種別
  - 其一 單接續詞之定義
  - 其二 純副詞之定義
  - 其三 接續問詞之定義
  - 其四 疑詞之定義
  - 其五 法副詞之定義
- 第三 文法的式樣
  - 比較——構定義
  - 前置——詞性支配義
  - 前置——關係詞的
  - 前置——關係詞的
- 第四 前置
- 第五 前置

- 第六 接續連詞之定義
- 第七 接續詞之種類
  - 其一 接續詞之種類
  - 其二 接續詞之種類
  - 其三 接續詞之種類

丙——復習第一、

- 第一、 Adverb ナル語ノ誘原如何、
  - 第二、 文法上ノ使用ニ關シテ副詞ヲ類別スルコト如何、
  - 第三、 一個ノ接續副詞ヲ有スル文句一ヲ書セ、
  - 第四、 時、位地、否拒ノ副詞ノ例ヲ書セ、
  - 第五、 the more the merrier ノ the ナ説明セヨ、
  - 第六、 副詞ノ比較法如何、
  - 第七、 代名詞ヨリ誘導サレタル五個ノ副詞ノ源ヲ問フ、
- 復習第二、
- 第一、 次ノ詩ヲ讀ミ、前置詞及接續詞ヲ表ニ作クレ、

It is enacted in the laws of Venice.—If it be proved against an alien, That by direct or indirect attempts He seek the life of any citizen, The party 'gainst the which he doth contrive Shall seize one half his goods; the other half Comes to the privy coffer of the state; And the offender's life lies in the mercy Of the duke only, 'gainst all other voice.

In which predicament I say thou stand'st: For it appears, by manifest proceeding, That indirectly—and directly too—Thou hast contrived against the very life Of the defendant; and thou hast incurred The danger formerly by me rehearsed.

Down, therefore, and beg mercy of the duke.

第二、總テノ單純ナル前置詞ノ使用法ヲ説明スルニ足ルベキ數文句ヲ書セ、  
復習第三、

- 第一、 Conjunction ナル語ヲ詞論的ニ詳説セヨ、
- 第二、 同格接續詞トハ如何、又々例ヲ引テ之ヲ説明セヨ、
- 第三、 附屬接續詞トハ如何、又々例ヲ引テ之ヲ説明セヨ、
- 第四、 對立接續詞一個ヲ有スル文句ヲ書セ、
- 第五、 前ニ示シタル「ヴェニス」商人ナル詩ノ引句ニ在ル接續詞ヲ表ニ作クレ、

第六、二個ノ間投詞ヲ有スル一文句ヲ書セ、

第九章 八品詞之用及解剖

教師之注意、八品詞ノ用(即ハチ職任)ハ詞論ニ於テ論ズルヨリ、寧ロ文詞論ニ至ツテ論ズルヲ當レトス、然ルニ今之ヲ茲ニ論ズル抑モ故アリ、夫レ先キニ已ニ示シタルガ如ク、英倫語ハ語尾變化ノ度甚ダ少ナキ國語ニシテ、文句中ノ名詞ガ如何ナル職ヲ有スルヤヲ了知スルニ非ンバ、從ツテ其文法的式樣ヲ判別スル能ハザルハ、屢々見ルコトナリ、之ヲ例スルニ主格ノ名詞ト目的格若クハ絕對構造ノ名詞トノ間ニ判然タル區別無ク、又々目的格ノ名詞ト賓格(Dative case)ト云ヒ、名詞ガ前ニ置カレ又ハ後ニ置カレ有スル時ニ、所有スル格ナリ)即チ副詞狀ノ構造ヲナス名詞トノ間ニモ何等ノ區別無シ、然ラバ今學生ヲシテ文法的式樣ヲ辨別スルノ良法ヲ知ルコト能ハザラシメ、旋タ又々文法的性質ヲ識別スルニ由ナキ語ノ文法的性質ヲ表示セシメントスルハ、多少非理タルコト免ガレズシテ、學生ガ英倫語ノ詞論ヲ學ンデ得タル理會ノ朦朧不全ナル所以ヲ説明スルニ足ル者ナルガ如シ、是レ此教科書ニ於テ各品詞中ニ其職務ノ詳解ヲ付シタル因由ナリ、然ラバ此事タル專ラ文詞論ニ屬スベキ者ニアラズ、亦々專ラ詞論ニ屬スベキ者ニモ非ズ、蓋シ深ク之ヲ考フレハ詞論ト文詞論トノ中間ニ位スベキ者トス、是ヲ以テ今詞論的解剖ノ練習ニ於テハ語ノ性質ヲ透算シ、之ニ次テ某語ノ特用ヲ表説セシム、然レドモ茲ニ所謂特用ヲ表説スルハ文

詞論ノ規則ノ形狀ヲ以テスルニアラズ、必竟依テ以テ他ニ之ヲ判定スル方法ナキ語ノ文法的式様ヲ決定スルノ便ヲ與フルニ過ギザルノミ、

### 第一款 名詞

第七十四節 名詞ヲ詞論的ニ解剖スルニハ左ノ二項ヲ詳説スルヲ要ス、

- 第一ハ名詞ノ種類ニシテ、固有ナルヤ、普通ナルヤ、又ハ抽象ナルヤヲ示ス、
- 第二ハ名詞ノ文法的式様ヲ示シ、數ト性ト格トヲ擧グ、
- 名詞ガ第一人稱若クハ第二人稱ナルニ非ンバ、一一表示スルヲ要セズ、
- 第三ハ名詞ノ用ヲ示メス、

### 第七十五節

文句中ノ名詞ニ九様ノ用、即ハチ九様ノ職アリ、

- 第一、主 subject 名詞ハ、之ヲ動詞ノ主トシテ主格ニ在ルコトヲ得、解剖ノ模様左ノ如シ、

The bugle's note and cannon's roar the deathlike silence broke.

note……………一ノ普通名詞ニシテ、其數ハ單數、其性ハ中性、其格ハ主格ニテ、broke ナル働詞ノ主ナリ、

roar……………一ノ普通名詞ニシテ、其數ハ單數、其性ハ中性、其格ハ主格ニテ、broke ナル働詞ノ主ナリ、

### 練習第十

次ノ文句ノ主名詞ヲ詞論的ニ解剖セヨ、

- 第一、 Water consists of two gases. [水ハ二種ノ瓦斯ヨリ成ル]
- 第二、 Napoleon went to Egypt with forty sail-of-the-line, [拿破烈翁ハ四十艘ノ艦隊ヲ帥ヒテ埃及ニ進メリ]
- 第三、 Life's but a walking shadow. [生命ハ恰モ歩行スル影ノミ]
- 第四、 Holy and heavenly thoughts shall counsel her. [清淨彥聖ノ思想ハ彼女ヲ訓戒セン]
- 第五、 Then rose from sea to sky the wild farewell. [時ニ告別ノ大聲海上ヨリ空中ニ昇レリ]
- 第六、 The boy stood on the burning deck, Whence all but him had fled. [小兒ハ燃ヘタル甲板ニ立チタリシガ、他ノ人ハ皆逝ク去レリ]

第七、 Kindness to animals is a duty of all.  
〔動物ヲ愛スルハ人人ノ義務ナリ〕

第二、 持格、 持格ノ名詞ハ屬性ノ如クニ用ユルヲ得ベクシテ、其場合ニ在テハ、此名詞ハ與ニ連結スル他ノ名詞ノ意義ヲ節限シ、若クハ變形スルト云フ、  
解剖ノ模式次ノ如シ、

The bugle's note and cannon's roar the death-like silence broke.

bugle's } 單數、中性、持格ノ普通名詞ニシテ、note ナル名詞ノ意味節限セリ、  
cannon's } 單數、中性、持格ノ普通名詞ニシテ、roar ナル名詞ノ意味ヲ節限セリ、

次ノ文句中ノ持格名詞ニ詞論上解剖ヲ應用セヨ、

第一、 The spider's web is a wonderful piece of work.  
〔蜘蛛ノ網ハ驚ンベキ工事ナリ〕

第二、 Some judge of author's names, not works.  
〔或人ハ著書ヲ評セズメシテ其入ノ名ヲ評ス〕

第三、 See laurels on the bald first Caesar's head,  
〔シーザーガ秃頭上ノ桂冠ヲ見ヨ〕

第四、 This is my fathers' ancient burial-place.  
〔此ハ我ガ祖先ノ古キ埋葬地ナリ〕

第五、 So shall the Northern pioneer go joyful on his way,  
To wed Penobscot's waters to San Francisco's bay.  
〔北地ノ兵「カンノスコット」ノ水ト「サンフランシスコ」灣ヲ連結サシメテ我ニ喜ムヲ進行セム〕

第六、 Progress, Liberty's proud teacher,  
Progress, Labor's sure reward.  
〔進歩ヨ、自由ノ師ハキ師ナリ、進歩ヨ、勤勞ノ報ニナキ褒賞ナリ〕

第三、 目的、 目的格ニ在ル名詞ハ他働詞ノ目的トナルヲ得ベシ、  
解剖ノ模式左ノ如シ、  
The bugle's note and cannon's roar the death-like silence broke.  
silence 〔單數、中性、持格ノ抽象名詞ニシテ、broke ナル働詞ノ目的ナリ、

練習第十二

次ノ文句ノ目的格名詞ヲ詞論的ニ解剖セヨ、  
第一、 I met a little cottage girl.



【余ハ嚴寒ノ小女ニ逢ヘリ】

第一、 The Muses haunt clear spring or shady grove or sunny hill.

【神女「ミサス」ハ或ハ清春ニ或ハ陰森ニ或ハ陽光ノ輝ク山邱ニ往來ス】

第二、 The reindeer draws the Laplanders sledge.

【馴鹿「マソマンヤ」人ノ橇ヲ曳ク】

第四、 The Laplander defies the severity of his native climate.

【ラソマンヤ」人ハ極國ノ嚴寒ヲ凌グ】

第五、 When he read the note, he shook his head, and observed that an affair of this sort demanded the utmost circumspection.

【彼ハ其記録ヲ讀ミ頭ヲ振リ、此等事ハ非常ノ謹慎ヲ要スルノ事ヲ知リテ】

第六、 We carved not a line, we raised not a stone.

【吾人ハ一畫ヲモ刻セズ、一石ヲモ建テザリシ】

第七、 Enough, enough; sit down and share a soldier's couch, a soldier's fare.

【足ヘリ、足ヘリ、坐シテ兵卒ノ榻ニ倚リ兵卒ノ食物ヲ取ル】

第八、 Who would bear the whips and scorns of time,

The oppressor's wrong, the proud man's contumely?

【誰ハカ時ノ鞭ヲ罵辱ヲ忍ビ、殘虐者ノ暴行ト驕慢者ノ侮侮ヲ忍マヤ】

第四、 熟語ノ用 名詞ハ前置詞ノ方便ヲ借リテ他ノ語ニ連接セラレ、トチ得ベシ、而シテ其場合ニハ前置詞ニ係屬スル故ニ、目的格ナリトシテ之ヲ解剖ス、

名詞及ビ所謂之ヲ支配スル前置詞トハ、前置詞的熟語 Prepositional Phrase ナ構成ス、解剖ノ摸式左ノ如シ、

The army crossed the river by a bridge made of pontoon-boats.

bridge [單數、中性、目的格ノ普通名詞ニシテ、by ナル前置詞ニ係屬ス、pontoon-boats {複數、中性、目的格ノ普通名詞ニシテ、of ナル前置詞ニ係屬ス、

### 練習第十三

前置詞ニ支配セラレタル目的格ノ名詞ヲ詞論ニ從テ解剖セヨ、

第一、 The Gauls were conquered by Caesar

【ゴール人ハ「シーザー」ニ征服サレタリ】

第二、 We gazed with inexpressible pleasure on those happy islands.

【吾人ハ言フベカラザル快樂ヲ以テ、其幸ナル島ヲ注視セリ】

第三、 The end of government is the good of mankind.

〔政府ノ目的ハ人類ノ善良即チ福利ニ在リ〕

第四、 There came to the beach a poor exile of Erin.

〔「エリン」ノ怜レムヘキ流人カ渚ニ來ベシ〕

第五、 From peak to peak the rattling crags among, Leaps the live thunder.

〔轟聲響タル岩石ノ間ニ激雷峯頭ニ飛テ〕

第六、 Out flew millions of flaming swords drawn from the thighs of mighty cherubim.

〔勇猛ナル天使ノ腰ヨリ幾百万ノ銳劍閃々トシテ飛現セリ〕

第五、 間接目的

Indirect object.

目的格ノ名詞ハ動詞ノ間接目的トナルヲ得ベシ、而

シテ此目的ハ常ニ直接目的ノ前ニ在ル者ニシテ誰ニ向テトカ誰ニトカ何者ノ爲ニトカ若シ

ハ何者ニ等ノ問ニ答フヘキ事物ナルヲ以テ、容易ニ之ヲ認知シ得ベシ、

古代ノ英語ニハ間接目的ヲ表示スルニ特別ノ語尾變化アリテ、之ヲ賓格 Dative case ト云

ヘリ、蓋シ付與格 *giving case* ト云フ義ナリ、而シテ賓格ト云ヘル、名稱ヲ與ヘタル所以ハ、

(古代ノ書法)

This king gave large gifts ministrum.

(近時ノ書法)

This king gave (to) the ministers large gifts.

解剖ノ模式左ノ如シ、

(一) We gave the man a book.

(二) Socrates taught Plato philosophy.

man, ..... [單數、男性、目的格ノ普通名詞ニシテ、gave ナル動詞ノ間接目的ナリ、

Plato, .....] [單數、男性、目的格ノ固有名詞ニシテ、taught ナル動詞ノ間接目的ナリ、

練習第十四

間接目的トシテ用キラレタル名詞ヲ詞論ニ依テ解剖セヨ、

第一、 This king gave the ministers large gifts.

〔王ハ大臣ニ大ナル賜ヲ授ケタリ〕

第二、 The judge granted the prisoner a full pardon.

〔判官ハ罪人ヲ宥赦セリ〕

第三、 Ascham taught Lady Jane Grey the Greek language.

〔アスカムハ「ゼーン、グレイ」夫人ニ希臘語ヲ教ヘタリ〕

- 第四、 Lend the poor man a dollar.  
〔貧人ニ一圓ヲ貸セ〕
- 第五、 We sent the teacher a request.  
〔吾人ハ教師ニ願書ヲ送レリ〕

第六、 同格 Appositive. 名詞ハ他ノ名詞ヲ説明スルニ使用スルヲ得ベシ、其場合ニ於テハ、其名詞ノ説明セラレタル名詞ト同格ニ在リト云フ、即チ説明セラレタル名詞ニ從テ、或ハ主格トナリ、或ハ目的格トナリ、或ハ持格トナルナリ、  
解剖ノ方式左ノ如シ、

- (一) Ali reined, a man of war and voes,  
man ..... 單數、男性ノ普通名詞ニシテ、主格ナリ、何トナレバ Ali ト同格ノ名詞ニシテ、Ali ガ reined ナル動詞ノ主ナルガ故ニ、此名詞モ亦主ナレバナリ、
- (二) We beheld Mississippi, mighty river.  
river ..... 單數、中性ノ普通名詞ニシテ、目的格ナリ、何トナレバ behold ナル動詞ノ目的ナル Mississippi ト同格ノ名詞ナレバナリ、

練習第十五

次ノ文句ノ同格名詞ニ詞論的解剖ヲ應用セヨ

- 第一、 Next came Thomas, the boy that cleans the boots.  
〔次ニ長靴ヲ磨ク小厮「トーマス」來レリ〕
- 第二、 Then we saw Thomas, the boy that cleans the boots.  
〔其時吾人ハ長靴ヲ磨ク小厮ナル「トーマス」ヲ見タリ〕
- 第三、 Washington, the father of his country, was the first president of the United States.  
〔合衆國ノ父「ワシントン」ハ其國第一ノ大統領ナリ〕
- 第四、 Whang the miller was very avaricious.  
〔磨穀者「ホアング」ハ甚ダ貪婪ナリシ〕
- 第五、 We admire Milton, the great English poet.  
〔吾輩ハ英倫詩歌ノ大家「ミルトン」ヲ賞嘆ス〕

第七、 講說主格 Predicate nominative. 名詞ハ一定ノ自働詞若クハ受働詞ノ後ニ來リ其意義ヲ補足スルヲ得ベシ、然レドモ尙ホモ働詞ノ主ナル人物ヲ指示ス、之ヲ名ケテ講說主格ト稱ス

例之ハツ The author of this book is my brother ナル文句ニ在テ、brother ハ講說中ニ入リタル語ナレドモ、決シテ動詞ノ目的ニアラズ、何トナレバ is ナル動詞ハ author 及 my brother ガ共ニ同一ノ人ナルヲ確定スレバナリ、是ヲ以テ author ガ主格ニ在ラハ brother モ亦々主格ヲラザル可カラズ、之レト同理ニ依リ、The author of this book is ノト云フヲ得レドモ、此ノIノ字ヲ目的格トシテ me トスルヲ得ズ、解剖ノ摸式左ノ如シ、

(一) Tennyson is a poet.

poet〔單數男性ノ普通名詞ニシテ、is ナル動詞ノ後ニ在ル講說主格ナリ、

(二) Washington was elected president in 1789.

president〔單數、男性ノ普通名詞ニシテ、was elected ナル動詞ノ後ニ在ル講說主格ナリ、

### 練習第十六、

次ノ文句中ノ講說主格ノ名詞ニ詞論的解剖ヲ應用セヨ、

第一、 And, Saxon, I am Rodeck Dhu.

〔サンソン〕モ余ノ「ロマンソン、サノー」ナリ

第二、 The earth is a planet.

〔地球ハ一ノ惑星ナリ〕

第三、 Mary still seemed a Queen(——was a Queen in seeming or appearance).

〔「マリー」ハ尙キ女王ト見ヘタリ〕

第四、 King William of prussia became Emperor of Germany in 1871.

〔普魯士ノ維廉王ハ千八百七十一年ニ日耳曼國帝ヲナリ〕

第五、 He was a man, takehim for all in all, I shall not look upon his like again.

〔彼ハ眞人ナリ彼ノ性行ヲ通觀スルニ我亦彼ノ如キ人ヲ見ザラン〕

第八、 不羈 Independent. 及絕對 Absolute. 名詞ハ主格不羈トナリ、又々絕對主格ニ在ルヲ得其例左ノ如シ、

(一) Horatius, saith the consul, as thou sayest, so let it be.

(二) The storm having ceased, we departed.

第一、 不羈主格 Nominative Independent. 第一例ニ於テ Horatius ハ文句中ノ他ノ語ニ屬屬セズテ自己獨立セリ、故ニ之ヲ不羈ト稱シ、主格ナリトシテ解剖ス、

第二、 絕對主格 Nominative Absolute. 第二例ニ於テ storm ナル語ハ文句中ノ他ノ語ニ對シテ文法的關係ヲ有セズ、蓋シ此文句ハ The storm ceased, and we departed ト云フ義ニモアラズ、又々 When the storm ceased, we departed ト云フ義ニモアラズ、必ズ

The storm having ceased, we departed ト云ハザレ可カライマス、茲ニ the storm having ceased ナル語ハ、一ノ熟語(第二百十八節ヲ見ヨ)ニシテ、斯ク用ヰタル名詞ハ絶対主格ニ在リト云フ、

解剖ノ方式左ノ如シ、

(一) Mary, your lilies are in bloom.

Mary (第二人稱、單數、女性ノ固有名詞ニシテ、不羈主格ナリ、

(二) The river not being fordable, we had to make a great dé tour.

river (單數、中性、ノ普通名詞ニシテ、絶対主格ナリ、

注、練習第十七乙ノ解剖ヲ見ヨ、

第九、副詞狀目的格 Objective Adverbial 目的格ニアル名詞ハ時、距離、價值等ノ程度ヲ

示スニ當リ働詞若クハ形容詞ヲ變形スル副詞ノ如クニ用ヒラル、コヲ得ベシ、其例左ノ如シ

(一) We walked a mile.

(二) You are a foot taller than I.

(三) The battle lasted three days.

斯ノ如クニ用ヒタル名詞ヲ副詞狀目的格名詞ト稱ス、

世ノ文法家ハ多ク斯ノ如ク用ヰタル名詞ヲ前置詞ニ支配サレタル者ナリトシ、前例ハ

We walked for a mile 又ハ You are taller by a foot ト同一トナセリ、然レドモ茲ニハ實

ニ一ノ前置詞ヲモ加入スルベカラザルナリ、蓋シ斯ノ如キ名詞ハ古代ノ英語ニ在テ尺度

ヤ時等ヲ示スニ使用シタル持格 Genitive case 若クハ賓格ノ變形シタル者ナリ、例之ヘハ

現今 three furlongs broad ト云フ者ハ、「アングロ、サクソン」語ニテハ threeora furlongra

broad ト云ヒミニテ、furlongra ハ茲ニ持格ナリ、又々方今 bound hand and foot ト云フ者

ハ「アングロ、サクソン」語ニテハ bound hand-mu and fót-um ト云ヒミニテ、hand-mu 及

fót-um ハ賓格ナリシナリ、

解剖ノ模式左ノ如シ、

That pole is ten feet high.

feet 複數、中性ノ普通名詞ノ目的格ニシテ、high ナル形容詞ヲ變形スル副詞狀目的格ナ

リ、(即チ high by ten feet ト同シ)、

注、練習第十七乙ノ解剖之例ヲ見ヨ、

練習第十七、

甲、次ノ文句中ニ伊太利字ニテ書セル名詞ヲ解剖セヨ、(第七十五節第一ヨリ第五マ

ス)

第一、 All men are created equal.

〔人ハ尽ク同等ニ生出サレタリ〕

第二、 Then rose from sea to sky the wild farewell.

〔昔別ノ聲海天ニ昇キヨリ〕

第三、 Vanish'd is the ancient splendor, and before my dreamy eye

Wave these mingling shapes and figures, like a faded tapestry.

〔古時ノ豪華ハ己ニ消失シ、万多ノ形象参差トミナ眼前ニ逝ナリ、恰モ古ヨリタル金織ノ如シ〕

第四、 The speed along the drawbridges flies.

〔馬ノ吊橋ニ沿フテ走ル〕

第五、 I could hear my friend chide him for not finding out some work, but at the same time saw him put his hand in his pocket and give him sixpence.

〔彼ガ「オ」課ヲ求メザルヲ以テ余ノ友人ガ之ヲ責罵スル聲ヲ聞キシガ、又々其時友人ハ袖ヨリ六「ペンス」ヲ出シテ之ヲ彼ニ與フルヲ見タリ〕

第六、 Thou knowest my praise of nature most sincere,

And that my raptures are not conjured up

To serve occasions of poetic pomp, But genuine, and art partner of them all.

〔汝ハ余ガ眞實ニ自然ヲ讚美スルヲ知ル、又々余ノ熱情ハ決シテ調語ノ美ヲ術ヲ爲シ凝視シ出サレタルモノニアラズ、純率タル眞摯極々詩歌ノ術ヲ友トセラルヲ知ラン〕

第七、 Thy name and watchword o'er this land I hear in every breeze that stirs, and round a thousand alters stand Thy banded party worshippers.

〔余ハ微動スル微風中ニ汝ノ名ヲ聞ギ、又々此土ノ警語ヲ聞ク、而シテ千百ノ祭壇ノ周圍ニ「一隊」ノ禮拜者蟻ノ如ク

群立ス〕

第八、 Whilst I was thus musing, I cast my eyes towards the summit of a rock that was not far from me, where I discovered one in the habit of a shepherd, with a little musical instrument in his hand.

〔余ハ低回スル間ニ、目ヲ上メテ遠カラザル岩石ノ頂ヲ見タリシニ、「一」ノ牧羊者ガ手ニ少サキ樂器ヲ携ヘタルヲ見タリ〕

第九、 His spear, to equal which the tallest pine]

Hev'n on Norwegian hills to be the mast of some great admiral were but a wand, He walked with, to support uneasy steps over the burning marks.

〔彼人ノ槍ハ甚ダ長大ニシテ、那威ノ邱山ヨリ伐リタル最高松樹ノ大軍艦ノ帆樫トナルベキ者サハ、之ニ比スレバ通常ノ槍ト杖トノ差アラシカト感ハル、然ルニ彼ハ之ヲ以テ歩行シ、然士ノ歩ミ難キヲ避ケタリ〕

第十、 The gushing flood the tartans dyed.

「濱出ノハ洪水ハ」タルマン」ヲ染メタリ」

第十一、 Lives of great men all remind us we can make our lives sublime, and, departing, leave behind us Footprints on the sands of time.

「英雄ガ生涯ノ事業ヲ讀メハ吾人モ大業ヲ遂ゲテ死後万年ニ芳名ヲ流メテ得キカト思ハシム」

第十二、 His father's sword he has girded on.  
「彼ノ父ノ劍ヲ佩ケリ」

第十三、 Leaves have their time to fall and flowers to wither at the North Wind's breath.

「北風吹タハ葉モ落ル時アリ花モ散ル時アリ」

第十四、 Then future ages with delight shall see How Plato's, Bacon's, Newton's looks agree.

「異日」ノ「ブロー」ト「ベーコン」ト「ニウトン」ニ氏ノ見解如何相符キヌルヲ喜ビルヲ望ム」

第十五、 The only, the perpetual dinge That's heard there is the sea-bird's cry, The mournful murmur of the surge, The cloud's deep voice, the wind's low sigh.

「其處ニ聞ユル絶トサナ聲ノ海鳥ノ時時ト波瀾ノ低聲ト風聲ノ低聲トナリ」

第十六、 The patriarch made Joseph a coat of many colors.  
「祖父ハ」シヨセフ」ニ諸色ノ外套ヲ作り與ヘタリ」

第十七、 Lend your neighbors a helping hand.

「隣人ニ助手ヲ貸セ」

第十八、 We forgive our friends their faults.

「吾人ハ友人ノ失策ヲ宥恕ス」

第十九、 Then give humbly a coach-and-six, Justice a conqueror's sword, or a truth  
a gown, or public spirit its great cure, a growth.

「謙遜ニ車ヲ與ヘヨ、公道ニ勝利者ノ劍ヲ與ケヨ、眞理ニ衣服ヲ與ケヨ、義氣ニ大冠ヲ與ケヨ」

第二十、 He chooses company, but not the squire's.  
「彼ハ朋輩ヲ撰ミ郷長ノ朋ヲ撰ヤズ」

乙、(第七ヨリ第九マデ)

第一、 Thompson, the poet, was a contemporary of Hume, the historian.

「詩家」ト「サムソン」ハ「史家」ト「フーム」ト同時ノ人ナリ」

第二、 The emperor Kachii, a soldier of fortune, marched against the Huns.  
「幸運ナル兵卒タル」カチキ」ナル王ハ匈牙利人ニ逆メテ進軍ナリ」

第三、 'Tis I, Hanlet the Dane.  
「余ハ唯馬人」ハムレット」ナリ」

第四、 This is my son, mine own Telemachus.

- 〔是ノ余ノ子「サントキオス」ナリ〕
- 第五、 There, swinging wide at her moorings, lay The Somerset, British man-of-war—  
A phantom ship.  
〔靈妙ナル貌利頓ノ軍艦「ノーソーセメント」ノ碇ヲ結ンテ緩ルン埠頭ニ横ハレリ〕
- 第六、 Be a hero in the strife.  
〔等ニ當テハ英雄トナシ〕
- 第七、 Discretion is the better part of valor.  
〔小心翼々ハ勇氣ノ粹ナルモノナリ〕
- 第八、 There were two fathers in this ghastly crew.  
〔此死色ナル水夫中ニ二人ノ父アリタリ〕
- 第九、 Brevity is the soul of wit.  
〔簡短ハ敏智ノ神髓ナリ〕
- 第十、 The proper study of mankind is man.  
〔人間ノ適當ナル學問ハ人ニ在リ〕
- 第十一、 The principle which gave a peculiar coloring to Isabella's mind was piety.  
〔女王「イザベラ」ガ心ニ美光ヲ興ハタル者ハ敬信ナリ〕
- 第十二、 And the earth was all rest, and the air was all love.

- 〔世界ハ休養タリ、空氣ハ愛タリ〕
- 第十三、 Others, their blue eyes with tears o'erflowing,  
Stand, like Ruth amid the golden corn.  
〔他人ハ目ニ涙ヲ溢ラシメ金粒ノ穂米ノ圃ニ在リ〕
- 第十四、 The hill-range stood Transfigured in the silver flood, Its blown snows  
flashing cold and keen.  
〔山脈ハ銀雪中ニ立テ容貌ヲ變ジ、輝々タル雪片ハ殿ミン飛下ス〕
- 第十五、 Success being hopeless, preparations were made for a retreat.  
〔成功ノ望ナク退却ノ準備起シタリ〕
- 第十六、 'Tis no wonder if thy perfect sight, Amid the sun's bright circle where thou  
sittest, See far and wide.  
〔「ヒーロー」モ、假令輝キタル日光中ニ汝ガ遠ク且ツ廣ク見得ルヲモ、決シテ驚カザレ〕
- 第十七、 Rise, crowned with light, imperial Salem, rise!  
〔起テヨ、光ヲ冠シテ「王」ノ「サラム」モ、起キモ〕
- 第十八、 With that she fell distract, And, her attendants absent, swallowed fire.  
〔之ヲ以テ其女ハ狂氣セリ、而シテ其従者ハ不在ニシテ彼女ハ火ヲ吸飲シタリ〕
- 第十九、 The war being ended, the soldiers returned to their homes.



〔戦國駿トキ兵士故國ニ歸レリ〕

第廿、 Listen, my children, and you shall hear Of the midnight ri de off Paul Revere.

〔聽テ余ガ兒ヨ、汝ハ「キートン」ノ「夜半ニ乗馬サムトハ聞ヘキ」〕

第廿一、 O Catalonian stern and wild, Meet nurse for a poetic child.

Land of brown heath and shaggy wood, Land of the mountain and the

flood.

〔オー屹嶺曠荒タル「カリドニヤ」ヨ、汝ハ「詩兒ヲ養フ好乳母ナリ」汝ハ草莽森林ノ多クミテ山多ク水亦々多キ地方ナリ〕

第廿二、 O lonely tomb in Moab's land, O dark Bethpeor's hill, Speak to these curious of ours And teach them to still.

〔オー「モーブ」ノ地ニ在ル寂寥タル墓碑ヨ、オー「ベスベオール」ノ暗黒ナル邱山ヨ、吾ガ奇ヲ好ム心ヲシテ汝ノ如ク幽靜ナル「ナ」ヲ傳ヤシメヨ〕

第廿三、 The antechambers were crowded all night with lords and councillors.

〔貴族ト議官ハ終夜并發聲ニ集合ナリ〕

第廿四、 Home they brought her warrior dead.

〔彼等ハ死シタル勇士ヲ故國ニ送レリ〕

第廿五、 Patrick Henry was hearily six feet high.

〔「パトリック・ヘンリー」ハ身ハ丈六尺ナリシ〕

第廿六、 Not without deep solicitude I saw the angry clouds gathering in the horizon,

north and south.

〔余ハ南北地平線上ニ集イル密雲ヲ見、倏然トシテ悲壯ノ思ヲナセリ〕

第廿七、 He that was dead came forth bound hand and foot.

〔「已」ニ死シタル彼ハ手足ヲ縛ラレテ來レリ〕

第廿八、 You came three times last week, but did you come the nearest way?

〔汝ハ前週ニ三回來レリ、然レドモ尤モ近キ道ヨリ來レリヤ否ヤ〕

第廿九、 Awake, my St. John, leave all meaner things.

〔覺悟セヨ、聖「ジョン」ヨ凡テ賤ミキ事物ヲ棄擲セヨ〕

第三十、 Milton, thou shouldst be with us at this hour.

〔「ミルトン」ヨ、今吾人ト共ニ有レヨ〕

第二款 代名詞

第一、用

第一百七十六節 代名詞ニモ九様ノ用アリテ、名詞九様ノ用ト畧相同シ、

只其異ナル所ハ副詞狀目的格ナル者ヲ欠ク代リニ結合 Connective ナル者アルノミ、

第一ハ働詞ノ主ナリ、其例左ノ如シ、

- (一) I know a bank whereon the wild thyme grows.
- (二) We looked on him as he lay wounded on the ground.
- (三) Some murmur when then their sky is clear.

第二ハ持格ナリ、其例左ノ如シ、

- (一) He knows his rights.
- (二) Whose is this image and superscription?

第三ハ働詞ノ目的ナリ、其例左ノ如シ、

- (一) Take her up tenderly.
- (二) He taught you how you might conquer them.
- (三) Whom do you mean? What are you doing?

第四ハ間接目的ナリ、其例左ノ如シ、

- (一) Tell him not to vex her.
- (二) The master gave them one dollar each.

第五ハ熟語ノ用ナリ、即チ前置詞ノ目的ナリ、其例左ノ如シ、

- (一) To whom much is given, of them much is required.
- (二) With malice toward none, with charity for all.

第六ハ講説主格ナリ、其例左ノ如シ、

- (一) It is I, be not afraid.
- (二) Those lips are thine.
- (三) Who say ye that I am?

第七ハ同格ナリ、其例左ノ如シ、

We all do fade as a flower.

注、此使用法稀ナリ、

第八ハ不羈又ハ絶對ナリ、其例左ノ如シ、

- (一) O Thou that rollest above, round as the shield of my fathers.
- (二) We being mounted, the cavalcade advanced.

第九、聯合、關係代名詞ハ文中ノ主要命題ニ在ル語ヨリ羈屬命題ヲ誘出シ、此ノ命題ト其語トヲ連結スルノ職ヲ有ス、其例左ノ如シ、

- (一) Longfellow is the poet who wrote "Evangeline".
- (二) I had a dream which was not all a dream.

(三) Solomon was the wisest man that ever lived.

第一例ノ文句ニ在テ、Longfellow is the poet ハ主要命題ニシテ、who wrote "Evangeline" ハ羈屬ノ句ナリ、而シテ who ナル關係代名詞ハ poet ナル前位ト此句トヲ聯結ス、

同様ニ第二例ノ文句ニ於テ、which ナル關係代名詞ハ dream ナル前位ト羈屬ノ句トヲ連結セリ、又々第三例ノ文句ニ在テ、that ナル關係代名詞ハ man ナル前位ト羈屬ノ句トヲ連結ス、

What ナル關係代名詞ハ屢之ヲ兩分シ、that which トナシテ解剖スルコトアリ、然レモ寧ロ直チニ之ヲ動詞ノ主若クハ動詞又ハ前置詞ノ目的ト見做シテ解剖シ、羈屬ノ句ヲ一個ノ者ト見做シテ論ズルヲ良トス、

注、What ハ who ノ中性ニシテ、之ヲ獨用スルハ猶ホ前位ヲ用ヒズシテ who ナ獨用スルガ如シ、故ニ What 及 who ノ本職ハ Who steals my purse steals trash 及 What is done can not be undone ナル文句中ニ在ルガ如クナル可キナリ、

第二、解剖

第一百七十七節 人代名詞ノ解剖ニハ左ノ六項ヲ詳説スルヲ要ス、

第一ハ種別ナリ、

第二ハ人稱ニシテ、第一人稱ナルヤ、第二人稱ナルヤ、又々第三人稱ナルヤヲ示ス、

第三ハ性ニシテ、第三人稱ノ時ニノミ之ヲ示ス、

第四ハ數ニシテ、單數ナルヤ、複數ナルヤヲ示ス、

第五ハ格ニシテ、主格ナルヤ、持格ナルヤ、又々目的格ナルヤヲ示ス、

第六ハ用ナリ、

注、my, thy, his 等ノ語ハ形容詞(又々持格形容詞)ノ如ク見做シ、mine, thine 等ハ主格又ハ目的格ニ在レバ持格代名詞ト見做ス、

第一百七十八節 關係代名詞ノ解剖ニハ左ノ七項ヲ詳説スルヲ要ス、

第一ハ種類ナリ、

第二ハ前位ニシテ、名詞ナルヤ、代名詞ナルヤ、名詞ノ價值ヲ有スル者ナルヤヲ示ス、

第三ハ人稱ニシテ、第一人稱ナルヤ、第二人稱ナルヤ、又々第三人稱ナルヤヲ示ス、

第四ハ性ニシテ、男性ナルヤ、女性ナルヤ、普通性ナルヤ、中性ナルヤヲ示ス、

第五ハ數ニシテ、單數ナルヤ、複數ナルヤヲ示ス、

第六ハ格ニシテ、主格ト持格ト目的格トヲ分別ス、

第七八用ナリ、

注、關係代名詞ノ人稱、性及數ハ其前位ト同シ、

第七十九節 疑問代名詞 疑問代名詞ノ解剖ニハ左ノ五項ヲ詳説スルヲ要ス、

第一ハ種類ナリ

第二ハ性ニシテ、問ニ答フル名詞ノ性ニ由テ男性カ女性カ、將テ普通性カ中性カヲ分別ス、

第三ハ數ニシテ、單數ナルヤ、複數ナルヤヲ示ス、

第四ハ格ニシテ、主格ナリヤ、持格ナリヤ、目的格ナリヤヲ示ス、

第五ハ用ナリ、

(一) Who steals my purse steals trash; 'tis something, nothing—— 'Twas mine,

'tis his, and has been slave to thousands.

But he that filches from me my good name Robs me of that which not enriches him, And makes me poor indeed.

who ..... 第三人稱、單數、男性、主格ノ關係代名詞(前位ヲ有セザル者、若クハ he ナル前位ヲ略シタル者ト思フニシテ、steal ナル働詞ノ主ナリ、

it ..... (his ノ中ニ在ルト略シタル者) 第三人稱、單數、中性、主格ノ人代名詞ニシテ、is ナル働詞ノ主ナリ、

mine ..... (was 及第二句ノ his ニ於テト略シタル者) 前ト同一ノ解剖ヲ用ユベシ、

his ..... 第一人稱、單數、男性、主格ノ代名詞狀形容詞(又ハ持格代名詞)ニシテ was ナル自働詞ノ後ニ在ル講説主格ナリ、

he ..... 性及其用ハ前者ト同様ニ解剖スベシ)

that ..... 第三人稱、單數、男性、主格ノ人代名詞、ニシテ、robs ナル働詞ノ主ナリ、

me ..... he ナル代名詞ヲ前位トシ、第三人稱、單數、男性、主格ノ關係代名詞ニシテ、filches ナル働詞ノ主ナリ、

me ..... 第一人稱、單數、男性ノ人代名詞ニシテ from ナル前置詞ニ屬シテ目的格ニ在リ、

that ..... 第一人稱、單數、男性ノ人代名詞ニシテ、robs ナル働詞ノ目的トナリ、目的格ニ在リ、

which ..... That ナル前位ナ有スル、第三人稱、單數、中性、主格ノ關係代名詞ニシテ enriches ナル働詞ノ主ナリ、

me ..... 第一人稱、單數、男性、目的格ノ人代名詞ニシテ、leaves ナル働詞ノ目的ナリ、

(一) The messenger himself revealed the treachery.

himself ..... 第三人稱、單數、男性、主格ノ複雜人代名詞ニシテ、messenger ナル名詞ト同格 ナリ、

(三) O Thou (太陽) that rollest above, round as the shield of my fathers!

thou ..... 第二人稱、單數、男性、ノ人代名詞ニシテ、不羈主格ナリ、

that ..... thou ナル代名詞ヲ前位ニ有スル 第二人稱、單數、男性、主格ノ關係代名詞ニシテ、 rollest ナル働詞ノ主ナリ、

(四) I shall not lag behind, nor err The way, thou leading.

I ..... 第一人稱、單數、女性、主格ノ人代名詞ニシテ、shall lag ナル働詞ノ主ナリ、

thou ..... 第二人稱、單數、女性ノ人代名詞ニシテ、絶對主格ニ在リ、

練習第十八、

次ノ文句ニ於テ伊太利字ヲ以テ書シタル代名詞ニ詞論的解剖ヲ應用セヨ、  
第一、 We can show you where he lies.

〔彼ハ何處ニ臥スルヤ吾人ハ汝ニ示メサ得〕

第二、 Surely, said I, man is but a shadow, and life a dream.

〔余云ハリ、實ニ人ハ只一ノ影ニミテ、生命ハ一ノ夢ニ過キス〕

第三、 Each thought on the woman who loved him best.

〔各人ハ尤用自己ヲ愛セシ女子ヲ心ニゼリ〕

第四、 I could hear my friend chide him for not finding out some work; but at the same time saw him put his hand in his pocket and give him sixpence.

〔彼方何ノ工事ヲモ、求得サルヲ以テ余ノ友人ガ之ヲ責罵スル聲ヲ聞キシガ、同時ニ又タ袖ヨリ六「ペンズ」ヲ出シ、之ヲ彼ニ與フルヲ見タリ〕

第五、 Not to know me argues yourself unknown.

〔汝ノ余ヲ知ラザルハ汝ノ余ニ知ラズナルヲ証明ス〕

第六、 Teach me thy statutes.

〔汝ノ法度ヲ吾ニ教ヘヨ〕

第七、 There taught us how to live, and (oh! too high The price for knowledge) taught us how to die.

〔如何ニ生活スルハキヤナ吾人ニ教ヘ、オ、知識ハ高價ナルヨ、又タ如何ニ死スルヲ教ヘタリ〕

第八、 Although my request was heard, for it seemed to me as though the stains of

manhood were passing from me, and I were relapsing into the purity and simplicity of childhood.

「余ノ所願通シタルガ如シ、何トナレバ成年ノ染汚去リテ、余亦小兒ノ純淨潔白ニ復ラントスルノ感ヲ荷セハナリ」

第九、 I know not what course others may take; but as for me, give me liberty or give me death.

「諸人ハ將ニ何チカナサントスルヤ、余之ヲ知ラズ、余一己ニ取ツテハ、自由ヲ得ルニ非ンバ、只一ノ死アラシム」

第十、 Who was the thane lives yet.

「キーン」〔サンニン〕人ノ爵位ノ名、タリシ人ハ今尙ホ生存ス」

第十一、 What in me is dark, illumine; what is low, raise and support.

「余ガ心ノ暗黒ハ之ヲ照ラセ、卑低ナル者ハ之ヲ高メテ去ケヨ」

第十二、 I had a dream which was not all a dream.

「余ハ余ノ夢ニハアラザリシ夢ヲ見タリ」

第十三、 Ah! little they think who delight in the strains, How the heart of the minstrel is breaking.

「嗚呼奏曲ヲ好ム人等ハ吹簫者ノ心ノ感動如何計リカ甚タシキヤナキレズ」

第十四、 Oh that those lips had language! Life has passed With me but roughly since I heard thee last Those lips are mine——thy own sweet smile I see, The same

that oft in childhood solaced me.

「嗚呼其愛スベキ唇ヨ、余ハ可愛ノ發語ヲ切望ス、余汝ノ終語ヲ聞キテ以來會弁トシテ樂マス、其唇ハ汝ノ唇ナリ、余ハ今尙ホ汝ノ唇邊ニ溫柔可愛ノ笑貌ヲ認知スルナリ、是レ嗚昔小兒ノ時余ヲ慰メタル愛顔ニ違ハザルナリ」

第十五、 Who would fardels bear?

「誰ガ重荷ヲ擔ハントスルヤ」

第十六、 Roll on, thou deep and dark blue Ocean, roll!

「深々蒼々タル大洋ヨ、汝深ヲ捲キ轉レヨ」

第十七、 Those who came to laugh remained to pray.

「嘲笑セントテ來レル諸人ハ祈禱セントテ止イン」

第十八、 We two set upon you four.

「吾等二人ハ汝等四人ヲ攻撃ス」

第十九、 England herself will sooner treat for peace with us on a footing of independence.

「英國ハ日ナラスミテ自ら和議ヲ講シ、我同胞ヲミテ獨立セシムルノ條約ヲナサン」

第二十、 On these and kindred thoughts intent I lay In silence musing by my comrade's side, He [being] also silent.

「此等及類似ノ專心ナル思考ヲ以テ余ハ朋友ノ傍ニ默想シ居リシガ、其時ニ余ノ朋友モ亦タ默然タリ」

第二十一、 What do you mean, you blockhead?

〔愚人ヨ、汝ノ言ハ何ト云フ哉ナルヤ〕

第二十二、 *O ye Romans, you are poor slaves*

〔オー羅馬人ヨ、汝ハ可憐ノ奴隷ナリ〕

第二十三、 *Thou away, the very birds are nute.*

〔汝去レ、鳥ハ少シモ啼カズ〕

第二十四、 *God from the Mount of Sinai, whose gray top] Shall tremble, he descendi-*

*ng, will himself Ordain them laws.*

〔神ハ「サイナイ」山上ヨリ下リテ白カラ人民ノ爲ニ法例ヲ定メシ時ニ其斑白ノ山巔ハ震動セシ〕

### 第三款 形容詞

#### 第一、解剖

第百八十節 形容詞ヲ詞論ニ從テ解剖スルニハ次ノ二項ヲ詳説スルヲ要ス、

第一ハ其種類ニシテ、定限形容詞ナルヤ、節制形容詞ナルヤヲ示シ、又々定限形容詞ナレバ、冠辭ナルヤ、代名詞形容詞ナルヤ、數量形容詞ナルヤヲ示ス、

第二ハ其比較ニシテ、比較級ナルヤ、最大級ナルヤヲ示ス、現級ハ之ヲ畧ノ可ナリ、

第三ハ其用ナリ、

#### 第二、形容詞之用

第百八十一節 形容詞ニ二様ノ主ナル關係アリ、第一ヲ屬性關係 *Attributive relation.* ニシテ第二ハ講説關係 *Predicative relation.* ナリ、

第一、 屬性關係 屬性關係ニ在テ形容詞ハ名詞若クハ代名詞ト密接スルベクシテ、働詞ノ爲メニ分離セラレザランコトヲ要ス(之ヲ屬性ト稱スル所以ハ、此ノ如ク使用シタル形容詞ハ、名詞ニ名付ラレタル事物ニ固着スルベキ屬性若クハ性質ヲ示スガ故ナリ、而シテ此屬性若クハ性質ハ、名詞ヲ以テ講説スベカラズシテ、只々名詞ニ附屬シタル者ト思フベシ)、其例次ノ如シ、

(一) *Now Morn, her rosy steps in the eastern chime*

*Advancing, sowed the earth with orient pearl.*

(二) *They the holy ones and weakly*

*Who the cross of suffering bore.*

第一、 屬性關係ノ形容詞ヲ解剖スルニ當リ、其職限ヲ詳説スルヲ要セズ、只々其形容詞ハ與ニ連結スル名詞若クハ代名詞ヲ變形スト云フノミニシテ足ル、

第二、 形容詞ハ時トシテ己ニ他ノ形容詞ニ一旦變形セラレタル名詞ヲ、再ビ變形スル

「アリ、例之ハ、*A pretty wooden bowl* ニ在テ、*pretty* ナル形容詞ハ、*wooden* ナル形容詞ト同時ニ *bowl* ナル名詞ヲ變形スルニ非ズシテ、*wooden bowl* ナル語ヲ變形セリ、此ノ如キ場合ニ在テハ接近ノ形容詞ト名詞トヲ連結シテ一個物ト見做シ、此一個物ヲ遠隔シタル形容詞ガ變形セリトシテ解剖スベシ、

解剖ノ模式左ノ如シ、

- (一) *Around the one fire winty night* *The farmer's rosy children sat.*  
*the*……………定冠辭ニシテ、*fire* ナル名詞ヲ變形ス、  
*one*……………一ノ定限形容詞(數量形容詞)ニシテ、*night* ナル名詞ヲ變形ス、  
*winty*……………一ノ節制形容詞ニシテ、*night* ナル名詞ヲ變形ス、  
*the*……………一ノ定冠辭ニシテ、*farmer's rosy children* ナル複合名詞ヲ變形ス、  
*rosy*……………一ノ節制形容詞ニシテ、*children* ナル名詞ヲ變形ス、
- (二) *I met a little cottage girl.*  
*a*……………一ノ不定冠辭ニシテ、*girl* ナル名詞ヲ變形ス、  
*little*……………一ノ節制形容詞ニシテ、*cottage* ナル形容詞ニ變形サレタル *girl* ナル名詞ヲ再ビ變形ス、

- cottage*……………*girl* ナル名詞ヲ變形シテ一ノ形容詞ニ使用セラレタル名詞ナリ、
- (三) *They the holy ones and weakly* *Who the cross of suffering bore.*  
*holy*……………一ノ節制形容詞ニシテ、*ones* ナル名詞ノ意義ヲ變形ス、  
*weakly*……………一ノ節制形容詞ニシテ、*ones* ナル名詞ノ意義ヲ變形ス、
- (四) *His opinion would have greater weight, were it supported by some arguments of the least value.*  
*his*……………一ノ定限形容詞ニシテ、*opinion* ナル名詞ノ意義ヲ變形ス、  
*some*……………一ノ定限形容詞(不定ノ)ニシテ、*arguments* ナル名詞ヲ變形ス、  
*least*……………最大級ニ在ル一ノ節制形容詞ニシテ、*value* ナル名詞ヲ變形ス、

### 練習第十九

次ノ文句ニ在テ伊太利文字ニテ書シタル形容詞ヲ詞論ニ從フテ解剖セヨ、

第一、*I am fond of loitering about country churches, and this was so delightfully situated that it frequently attracted me. It stood on a knoll, round which a small stream made a beautiful bend, and then wound its way through a long reach of soft*



meadow scenery. The church was surrounded by yew-trees, which seemed almost  
coeval with itself. Its tall Gothic spire shot up lightly from among them, with rooks  
and crows generally wheeling about it.

「余ハ村邸ノ寺院ノ近傍ヲ徘徊スルヲ好メリ、而シテ今言フ寺院ハ其地位形勢甚ダ快樂ナル者ナリシガ故ニ、屢々尋  
キテ遊ヒマツキ、其寺院ハ一ノ邸上ニ建チ、取山ノ下ニ一條ノ細流、寮廻シテ流レ、兩岸ノ廢地ハ青草柔カニ生  
ヒ、景色絶ハタ佳ナリ、院ノ周圍ニ幾百ノ扁柏ヲ繞シラシ、殆ンド寺院ト同年月ヲ經タル者ト思ハル、其間ニ一高  
塔ノ雲際ニ聳ヘルアリテ、景緻甚ニ其項ヲ廻旋セリ」

第一、 There eternal summer dwells, And west winds with musky wing About the  
cedar'd alleys fling Nard and cassia's balmy smells.

「永夏終ニマツ、西風ハ香羽ヲ以テ松樹ノ園ノ内廓ニ甘松肉桂ノ香氣ヲ送ル」

第二、 Three fishers went sailing away to the West.  
「三人ノ漁師ハ西方ニ航セリ」

第四、 Roll on, thou deep and dark blue Ocean, roll  
「深々暗々タル青洋ヨ、波浪ヲ擧ゲヨ」

第五、 For of all sad words of tongue or pen, The saddest are these——“It might  
have been.”

「筆紙ノ述ブル所、口舌ノ語ル所、悲トシク哀トスルキ者多シト雖モ、若シ其尤モ悲哀トスルキ者ナリ、」

第六、 Our sweetest songs are those that tell of saddest thought.

「吾人ガ尤モ歡樂ヲ感スル歌ハ、尤トモ悲トスルキ思想ヲ語ル者ナリ」

第七、 Like other dull men, the king was all his life suspicious of superior people.  
「王ハ恰モ愚人ノ如シ、生涯「ニニ優レル人ヲ疑ヘリ」

第八、 And first review that long, extended plain, And those wide groves already  
passed with pain.

「長廣ナル平原先ツ目ニ入り、廣大ナル森林ヲ過スルニ甚ダ苦マシ」

第九、 Each ivied arch and pillar lone pleads haughtily for glories gone.  
「各處ヲ生シタル建屋物ヲ、柱礎トドム柱礎ハ徒ニ誇ルヲノ聲ヲ發ス」

第十、 If disastrous war should sweep our commerce from the ocean, another gene-  
ration may renew it; if it exhaust our treasury, future industry may replenish it; if it  
desolate and lay waste our fields, still, under a new cultivation, they will grow green  
again, and ripen to future harvests. It were but a trifle, even if the wall of yonder  
Capitol were to crumble, if its lofty pillars should fall, and its gorgeous decorations  
be all covered by the dust of the valley. All these might be rebuilt. But who  
shall reconstruct the fabric of deminished government? Who shall rear again the  
well-proportioned columns of constitutional liberty? Who shall frame together the skillful

architecture which unites national sovereignty with state rights, industrial security, and public prosperity? No; if these columns fall, they will be raised not again. Like the Coliseum and the Parthenon, they will be destined to a mournful, a melancholy immortality. Bitter tears, however, will flow over them than ever were shed over the monuments of Roman or Grecian art, they will be the remnants of a more glorious edifice than Greece or Rome ever saw—the edifice of constitutional American liberty!

「若シ不幸ノ戦乱アツテ、海上ノ交易爲メニ阻碍セラレ、トモ、後代必ズ復々之ヲ再興スルヲ得ン、若シ又々其爲メニ吾人ノ府庫空竭ストモ、後世ノ勉勵必ズ復々之ヲ益タスヲ得ン、若シ又々其爲メニ田野ノ暴損スルコアルモ、再ビ耕作セバ新美ノ綠田ヲ得テ十分ノ收穫ヲ爲スベシ、若クハ議事堂ノ牆壁破碎スルアリ、若クハ其高大ナル柱楹ノ倒ルアリ、若クハ其華麗ナル裝飾ノ汚ル、アルモ、皆瑣細ノ事ナレバ、憂フルニ至ラズシテ、更ニ復々建ツルヲ得ン、然レドモ我が政府ニシテ一朝破滅スルアラバ、誰カ再ビ之ヲ組織センヤ、誰カ國民ノ權ト各州ノ權ト獨立ノ安全ト公衆ノ繁榮ヲ連絡スルノ巧妙ナル建築ヲ爲ス者アラシヤ、否誰人モ能ク之ヲ再建スル者ナカラシ、嗚呼之ヲ羅馬ノ「コリシナム」ニ比センカ、之ヲ希臘ノ「パージノン」ニ比センカ、羅馬希臘ノ零落ヲ傷ムヨリハ、吾人ガ此國光ヲ失フノ悲哀何斗リカ甚シカラシ、嗚呼吾人ガ國威ハ羅馬人希臘人が曾テ見タル堂宇ヨリモ遙カニ宏麗ナリ、我方亞米利加自由ノ建築ハ千古獨歩ノ奇觀ナリ、

第二、講說關係 形容詞ヲ講說ニ使用スルニ二様ノ職アリ、

其一、形容詞ハ自働詞若クハ受働他働詞ノ補足トナルヲ得、之ヲ名ケテ講說形容詞  
 Predicate adjective ト稱ス、其例左ノ如シ、

- (一) The fields are green.
- (二) The nation become powerful.
- (三) Mary looks cold.
- (四) Some men are called happy.

此ノ使用ニ在テ形容詞ハ働詞ノ主ニ關係ス、然レドモ是レ間接ニ關係セル者ニシテ、働詞ト共ニ連接シタル形容詞ハ主ノ事情ヲ表示ス、

斯ク使用シタル形容詞ヲ解剖スルニハ、其形容詞ハ如何ナル働詞ノ補足ニシテ、主ニ關係スルコトヲ詳說スルカ、若クハ單ニ講說形容詞ナリト稱スベシ、

其二、講說形容詞ハ他働詞ノ名詞補足ニ關係スルコトヲ得、同時ニ又々其働詞ヲ半ハ補足スルヲ得、

- (一) We call the proud happy.
  - (二) The streams whereof shall make glad the city of God.
- 此ノ使用ニ在テ働詞ト共ニ連結スル形容詞ハ、働詞ノ目的ノ事情ヲ表示ス、  
 解剖ノ方式左ノ如シ、
- (一) The fields are green.

green ..... 一ノ節制形容詞ニシテ、are ナル自働詞ノ補足トナリ、fields ナル主ニ關係ス、(又曰フ、是レ are ノ後ニ在ル講說形容詞ニシテ、fields ニ關係ス)

(II) Some men are called happy.

happy some ..... (一個ノ代名詞狀形容詞ニシテ、men ナル主ヲ變形ス、

一ノ節制形容詞ニシテ、are called ナル受働詞ノ補足トナリ、men ナル主ニ關係ス、

(III) Leave the lily rule, and tinge the violet blue.

pale ..... 一ノ節制形容詞ニシテ、leave ナル他働詞ノ補足トナリ、lily ナル目的ニ關係ス

blue ..... 一ノ節制形容詞ニシテ、tinge ナル他働詞ノ補足トナリ、violet ナル目的ニ關係ス、

### 練習第二十

次ノ文句ニ在テ伊太利文字ヲ以テ書シタル形容詞ヲ詞論的ニ解剖セヨ、

第一、 The rainbow comes and goes, And lovely is the rose; The moon doth with delight look round her when the heaven are bare; Waters on a starry night Are beautiful and fair.

〔虹霓隱顯シ、蒼淡好花ヲ開ク、月ハ無雲ノ碧落ヲ回顧シ、水ハ星漢ヲ浮メテ動搖ス〕

第二、 "O, sir," said the good woman, "he was such a likely lad——so sweet-tempered, so kind to every one around him, so *dubifol* to his parents.

〔善良ノ婦人曰ク、オー、君ヨ、彼兒ハ可愛ノ少年ニシテ、其性質ノ温良ナル、其他人ニ仁愛ナル、其父母ニ孝順ナル得テ言フベカラズト〕

第三、 The stately homes of England, How beautiful they stand.

〔儼然タル英倫家屋、其美言ノベカラズ〕

第四、 Why call ye me good?

〔汝何ヲ以テ吾ヲ善ナリトフヤ〕

第五、 Or, if a path be dangerous known, The danger's self is lure alone.

〔若シ道路ノ危險ナルコトヲ知ラン、只危險ノニ其危險ニ往來スルヘシ〕

第六、 Come when the heart beats high and warm.

〔心喜ンミン鼓動スル時ニ來ン〕

第七、 Thus, from afar, each dim-discovered scene More pleasing seems than all the part have been.

〔遠處ヨリ朦朧ト見ル景色ハ其全景ヨリモ更ニ快ナリ〕

第八、 By heaven, I change My thought, and hold thy valor light, As that of some

vain carpet-knight.

〔天ニ誓フテ余ハ思考ヲ變更シ、汝ノ勇氣ヲ輕クテ彼ノ逸樂ニ耽リ眞ノ勇氣ナキ武士ト同價ナリト云ハン〕

第四款 働詞

第百八十二節

働詞ヲ文句中ノ使用法ニ關シテ二類ニ別カチ、一ヲ

定働詞

Finite verb ト云ヒ、二ヲ働詞樣語 Verbal ト云フ、

働詞ト働詞樣語トノ必用ナル區別ハ、働詞ハ講説ニ用ヒラン、働詞樣語ハ講説ニ用ヒラレザル是レナリ、

第一、定働詞、

第百八十三節

解剖

働詞ハ其人稱ト數トガ其主ノ人稱ト數ニ一致

セリトシテ解剖ス、

是レ文詞論上働詞之規則符合セリ、而シテ今之ヲ爰ニ加入シタルハ、事實止ムヲ得ザルコトニシテ英語ノ働詞ニハ、人稱ノ語尾僅少ナルヲ以テ、人稱及數ハ、主ノ人稱及數ニ關シテ決定スルヲ常トスレバナリ、

働詞ノ詞論的解剖ハ次ノ六項ヲ詳説スルヲ要ス、

第一ハ配合ニシテ、規則配合ナルヤ、不規則配合ナルヤヲ示ス、

第二ハ種類ニシテ、他働詞ナルヤ、自働詞ナルヤヲ示ス、

第三ハ語法ニシテ、發動ナルヤ、受働ナルヤヲ示ス、

但シ自働詞ナルヤハ、之ヲ示スヲ要セズ、

第四ハ法ニシテ、直說法、可成法、接續法、命令法ヲ分別ス、

第五ハ時ニシテ、現在、過去、未來等ヲ分別ス、而シテ命令法ニ於テハ其時ヲ言ハズシテ可ナリ、

第六ハ人稱及數ニシテ、第一人稱、第二人稱、第三人稱ヲ區別シ、單數ナルヤ複數ナルヤヲ示ス、此等ハ皆主ノ人稱ト數トニ基クナリ、

注、若シ働詞ガ進行式樣、疑問式樣若クハ急切式樣ニ在ル時ハ、一一之ヲ舉ゲベシ、母レドモ尋常ノ場合ニハ、一モ式樣ニ關シテ言フヲ要セズ、

解剖ノ摸式左ノ如シ、

(一) Tell me not in mournful numbers life is but an empty dream.

一ノ不規則他働詞ニシテ、發働語法、命令法ノ第二人稱、單數ナリ、但シ you ナル主アリト見做シ、此ノ主ニ一致シテ人稱ト數トヲ定メタリ、

tell ハ目的ヲ要スル語ナルヲ以テ他働詞ナリ、茲ニ [that] life is but an e-

mpy dream ハ目的ニシテ、me ハ間接目的ナリ、

此解剖方ヨリモ次ノ方ヲ簡便トス、

Tell 一ノ働詞、不規則、他働、發働、命令ニシテ、you ナル主アリトシ、之ニ一致ノ  
第二、單數ナリ、

is ..... 一ノ不規則自働詞ニシテ、直說法ノ現在ナリ、He ナル主ニ一致シテ、第三人  
稱ノ單數ナルヲ知ル、

(II) The boast of heraldry, the pomp of power, And all that beauty, all that  
wealth e'er gave, Await alike th' inevitable hour, The paths of glory lead but  
to the grave.

gave ..... 一ノ不規則他働詞、發働語法、直說法、過去ニシテ、wealth ナル主ニ一致シテ、  
第三人稱ノ單數ナリ、

await ..... 一ノ規則他働詞、發働語法、直說法ノ現在ニシテ、boast, pomp 及 all ナル主ニ  
ノ主ニ一致シテ、第三人稱ノ複數ナリ、

lead ..... 一ノ不規則自働詞、直說法、現在ニシテ、paths ナル主ニ一致シテ、第三人稱ノ  
複數ナリ、

(III) I do believe that the lad was telling the truth.

do believe ..... 一ノ規則他働詞急切式様、發働語法、直說法ノ現在ニシテ、I ナル主ニ一致シ  
テ、第一人稱ノ單數ナリ、

was telling ..... 一ノ不規則他働詞、進行式様、直說法、過去ニシテ、lad ナル主ニ一致シテ、第  
三人稱ノ單數ナリ、

### 練習第二十一

次ノ文句ニ於テ伊太利文字ニテ書シタル働詞ヲ詞論ニ從ツテ解剖セヨ、

第一、 When, in the course of human events, it becomes necessary for one people to  
dissolve the political bands which have connected them with another, and to assume, a-  
mong the powers of the earth, the separate and equal station to which the laws of  
nature and of nature's God entitle them, a decent respect to the opinions of mankind  
requires that they should declare the causes which impel them to the separation.

〔人事ノ歩ヲ進ムルニ從ヒテ、一政ノ下ニ團結セル人民自カラ離割シテ字内万国ノ間ニ卓立シ、以テ自然之規則ガ  
定メタル獨立不羈ノ位置各個平等ノ權利ヲ保有スルノ必ズ止ムヲ從ザルヲ見ル、此ニ於テヤ、各其思想ヲ展開シテ  
以テ必ズ分離ヲ要スルノ原因ヲ表明公示スルハ道義上輿論ヲ尊敬スルガ爲メ必要ナル事ナリ〕

第二、 Then shrieked the timid.

〔其時憶者ハ叫呼セリ〕

第三、 The grave is the ordeal of true affection.

第四、 *No bird a winter had [not] been known for years.*

〔鷹格ノ眞覺ノ試探ナリ〕  
〔數年同箇程鷹獲ナレ冬ハナカツシ〕

第五、 *When that the poor have cried, Caesar hath wept.*

〔其慘ムキキ人が叫ビタル時「ミーサー」ハ涕泣セリ〕

第六、 *Each thought on the woman who loved him best.*

〔各人ハ尤モ自己ヲ愛スル女ヲ思ヒナリ〕

第七、 *Don't flatter yourselves that friendship authorizes you to say disagreeable things to your intimates. On the contrary, the nearer you come into relation with a person, the more necessary do [fact and courtesy] become. Except in cases of necessity, which are rare, leave your friend to learn unpleasant truths from his enemies; they are ready enough to tell them. Good-breeding never forgets that self-love is universal. When you read the story of the Archbishop and Gil Bias, you may laugh, if you will, at the poor old man's delusion; but don't forget that the youth was the greater fool of the two, and that his master served such a booby rightly in turning him out of doors.*

〔友情ハ親友ニ對シテ不快ヲ感ゼシムルヲ許サズ否之ニ反シテ交情愈密ナルニ從ヒ益禮節ヲ重ンゼザル可カラズ、

止ムヲ得ザルニアラザルヨリハ親友ニモ亦我過行失策ヲ語ル可カラズ、我ニ過失アレバ我友人ノ敵ハ常ニ之ヲ發見シテ以テ其深交中此ノ如キコアリト揚言スルニ吝ナラザルナリ、善良ノ教化ヲ受タル者ハ必ず自愛ノ普通ナルコトヲ知ル、人若シ大僧正並ニ「シル、ブラス」ノ事ヲ聞カバ老人ノ愚迷ヲ笑フ者アラン、然レドモ其實却テ幼者ノ愚ナリシナリ、故ニ其師ノ彼ヲ戶外ニ驅逐セシハ其當ヲ得タルモノナリ〕

第八、 *Holy and heavenly thought shall counsel her.*

〔神聖清淨ノ思想ハ彼女ヲ警誨セン〕

第九、 *Then rose from sea to sky the wild farewell.*

〔其時荒キ告別ノ聲ハ海ヨリ天ニ昇レリ〕

第十、 *The better part of valor is discretion.*

〔小心翼々ハ勇氣ノ端ナリ〕

### 第二、 勸詞様話

不定辭ヲ論ズ、第一、

第百八十四節 不定辭ハ次ノ如ク使用シ得可シ、

第一、 名詞、不定辭ハ名詞ノ職ヲナス、其例左ノ如シ、

- 甲、 勸詞ノ主トナル、例之ハ、*To walk (又ハ walking) is healthy.* ノ如シ、
- 乙、 他勸詞ノ目的トナル、例之ハ、*I like to walk (又ハ walking.)* ノ如シ、

第二、形○容○詞 不定辭ガ形容詞ノ職ヲナスコト左ノ如シ、

甲、自働詞若クハ受働詞ノ補足トナル、例之ヘハ “He appeared to comply”; “You mistake is to be deplored”; “He is to blame.” ノ如シ、

乙、名詞ニ關係スル屬性形容詞トナル、例之ヘハ “Water to drink” (——drinking-water ニシテ、drinking ハ一ノ「ゼラント」ナリ) “a time to laugh”; “permission to speak” ノ如シ、

第三、働詞又ハ形容詞ヲ變形スル副詞ノ用ヲナス、其例左ノ如シ、

- (一) I have come to see you.
- (二) I am sorry to hear this.

第百八十五節 「ゼラント」ハ形容詞若クハ副詞狀熟語ヲ作クリ、前置詞ノ目的ニ使用シ得ベシ、其例左ノ如シ、

- (一) Benjamin West had as a boy a talent for painting.
- (二) Bees are skilful in building their hives.
- (三) By working hard we improve.

第百八十六節 不定辭ヲ解剖スルニハ、左ノ三項ヲ詳説スルヲ要ス、  
第一ハ種類ニシテ、尋常不定辭ナルヤ、「ゼラント」ナルヤチ示ス、

第二ハ單○純○ナルヤ、複○合○ナルヤチ示ス、

第三ハ用ニシテ、名詞トナルヤ、形容詞トナルヤ、將タ副詞トナルヤチ示ス、  
解剖ノ模式左ノ如シ、

(一) To learn is a task indeed.  
to learn {一ノ單純不定辭ニシテ、名詞ノ如ク用ヒラレ、isナル働詞ノ主ナリ、

(二) Talking overmuch is a sigh of vanity.  
talking... {talkナル働詞ノ單純「ゼラント」ニシテ名詞ノ如ク用ヒラレ、isナル働詞ノ主ナリ

(三) A miser is to be pitied.  
to be ..... {一ノ單純不定辭ニシテ、isナル働詞ノ形容詞補足ニ用ヒラレ、 miser ニ

pitied 關係ス、  
(四) We are all striving to secure happiness.  
to secure... {一ノ單純不定辭ニシテ、are striving ナル働詞ヲ變形シテ、副詞ノ如ク用ヒラ

レ、(are striving to secure < striving for the purpose of securing ニ同シ)

(五) We are happy in doing our duty.  
doing ..... {doナル働詞ノ單純「ゼラント」ニシテ、名詞ノ如ク用ヒラレ、inナル前置詞ニ

附屬ス、

(六) 'Tis better to have loved and [to have] lost than never to have loved at all.  
to have} 一ノ複合不定辭ニシテ、名詞ノ如ク用ヰラレハ是ノ主ナリ、  
loved }  
To have lost } 同様ニ解剖セラレ、了解セラレタル是ノ主ナリ、

分詞ヲ論ズ、第二、

第百八十七節 分詞ハ屬性狀ノ語ニシテ、與ニ連結スル名詞若クハ代名詞ヲ間接ニ變形スル故ニ、形容詞ノ如クニ解剖ス、  
解剖ノ摸式左ノ如シ、

(一) The farmer sat in his easy-chair, smoking his pipe of clay.

(二) His head, bent down, on her soft hair lay; Fast asleep were they both on that summer day.

smoking... } farmer ナル名詞ヲ變形シ、 smoke ナル規則他働詞ノ現在(發働)分詞ナリ、  
bent... } headナル名詞ヲ變形シ、 bendナル不規則他働詞ノ過去(受働)分詞ナリ、

練習第二十二

次ノ文句中ニ在テ伊太利文字ニテ書シタル不定法及分詞ヲ詞論ニ從フテ解剖セヨ、

第一、 To be virtuous is to be happy.

[善良ナルハ幸福ナリ]

第二、 Seeing is believing.

[實見スルハ確信スルナリ]

第三、 I remember to have seen William at the Rink.

[余ハ「リンク」ニテ「ウヰリアム」ヲ見タルヲ記憶ス]

第四、 Philosophy teaches us to endure afflictions.

[理學ハ艱難ヲ忍耐スルヲ吾人ニ教フ]

第五、 Learn to labor and to wait.

[勤勞シテ待ツヲ知レ]

第六、 It is painful to see an animal suffering.

[苦痛スル動物ヲ見ルハ苦シキナリ]

第七、 His having failed is not surprising.

[彼ノ失策ハ驚クニ足ラズ]

第八、 I recommended turning a new leaf.

[余ハ新葉ヲ抽出スルヲ勧告シタリ]



第九、 *Throwing their muskets aside, the soldiers rushed on the foe.*  
〔兵士ハ鎗銃ヲ棄テ敵ニ突進セリ〕

第十、 *Born to a crown, Louis XVI. died on the scaffold.*  
〔王家ニ生メタル路易第十六世ハ斬首架上ニ死セリ〕

第十一、 *They wish to turn him from keeping bad company.*  
〔彼等ハ彼ヲ惡友ニ交ハラザラシメント欲ス〕

第十二、 *What we always put off doing, clearly we shall never do.*  
〔吾人ガ常ニ怠タル所ノ者ヲ、吾人ハ必ズ爲スコトナケン〕

第五款 副詞

第百八十八節 單純副詞ハ與ニ連結スル副詞ノ意義ヲ間接ニ變形スルニ使用セラレ、接續副詞ハ變形セシメ且ツ連接セシムルノ兩用ヲナス。

第百八十九節 副詞ヲ解剖スルニ次ノ三項ヲ詳説スルヲ要ス、

第一ハ種類ニシテ、單純ナルヤ、接續ナルヤ、疑問ナルヤ、將々作法副詞ナルヤヲ示ス、  
第二ハ比較ニシテ、比較級又ハ最大級ノミヲ示シ、餘ハ之ヲ略ス、

第三ハ用ニシテ、前ニ言ヘルガ如シ、

解剖ノ摸式左ノ如シ、

(一) *How sweet the moonlight sleeps upon this bank! Here will we sit, and let the sounds music Creep in our ears.*  
*How*……〔sweet ナル形容詞ヲ變形シ、一ノ單純副詞ナリ、

*here*……〔will sit ナル働詞ヲ變形シ、一ノ單純副詞ナリ、

(二) *Shall I be frightened when a madman stares?*  
*when*……一ノ接續副詞ニシテ、*stares* ナル働詞ヲ變形シ、誘出シタル句ト主要命題トヲ連結ス、

(三) *Where are the songs of Spring?*  
*where*……〔are ナル働詞ノ意義ヲ變形シ、一ノ疑問副詞ナリ、

練習第二十二

次ノ文句ニ於テ伊太利文字ニテ書シタル副詞ヲ詞論的ニ解剖セヨ、

第一、 *Washington ate heartily, but was no epicure. He took tea, of which he was very fond, early in the evening.*

〔華盛頓ハ一心ニ食セシカドモ、決メ大食セザリシ、又タ日暮早ク好ケル處ノ茶ヲ喫シタリ〕

第二、 *I'll fare it then with Roderick Dhu.*

〔其時「ロナツシヤン」キ「ド」ニ付テ其等ハ正シカラキヤシム〕

第三、 *Think of her scornfully, Touch her not mournfully! Gently and humanly.*

〔嘲罵シテ彼女ヲ犯ス勿ク、憐レト思ヘキ、溫和ニヤシヨナ、静ヲ持テヨヤ〕

第四、 *The world was all before them where to choose. Their place of rest, and Providence their guide.*

〔安逸ノ處ヲ憐レトヘキ世界ハ彼等ノ前ニマツ、而シテ天命ハ其引導者ナリ〕

第五、 *Thou, too, sail on, O Ship of State!*

〔航行セヨ、邦國ノ船ヨ〕

第六、 *And when above the surges They saw his crest appear, All Rome sent forth a rapturous cry, And even the ranks of Tuscany Could scarce forbear to cheer.*

〔大波浪上彼ノ冠ノ見エヌキ羅馬人ハ譽テ歡喜ノ聲ヲ發シ「タヌカニ」ノ隊ト雖モ亦歡情ヲ抑フル能ハザリシ〕

第七、 *Why should we shrink from what we cannot shun?*

〔吾人ハ何ヲ以テ避クル能ハザル者ヲ恐レテ避易セントスルヤ〕

### 第六款 前置詞、接續詞、及間投詞

#### 第一、前置詞

第九十節 前置詞ノ用ハ目的ト連合シテ一ノ熟語ヲ作ルニ在リ、左

例ノ如シ、

(一) *There is rest for the weary.*

(二) *Under her torn hat glowed the wealth of simple beauty and [of] rustic health.*

前置詞ト目的トナテ成レル連接語ヲ前置詞的熟語ト云ヒ、以テ分詞狀熟語ト區別ス、

第九十一節 前置詞ノ解剖法左ノ如シ、

第一ニ前置詞ナルトヲ表示ス、

第二ニ如何ナル二語ヲ連接スルヤヲ示ス、但シ先ツ目的ハ何ナルヤヲ云フベシ、

解剖ノ模式左ノ如シ、

*Around the rugged rocks the ragged rascal ran.*

around... (一)ノ前置詞ニシテ、 *ran* ナル動詞ニ *rascal* ナル名詞ヲ連結ス、

#### 練習第二十四

次ノ文句中ノ前置詞ヲ詞論的ニ解剖セヨ、

第一、 The thunders belloved over the wide waste of waters.

〔雷ハ大洋ノ上ニ轟ケリ〕

第二、 A murmuring whisper through the nunnery ran.

〔譁ミキ囁語ハ尼庵ヲ通ヘ聞ケタリ〕

第三、 He goes on Sunday to the church.

〔彼ハ日曜日ニ寺院ニ行ク〕

第四、 I seek divine simplicity in him Who handles things divine.

〔余ハ嚴聖ナル事物ヲ處スル人ニシテ亦々嚴聖ナル襟袖ヲ慕フ〕

第五、 He starts from his dream at the blast of the horn.

〔彼ハ喇叭ノ聲ヲ聞テ夢ヲ覺テス〕

第六、 Through all the wild October days the clash and din resounded in the air.

〔荒レタル十月中ハ騷擾擾々ノ聲四野ニ響ケタリ〕

第七、 But on the hill the golden-rod, and the aster in the wood, And the yellow sunflower by the brook, in autumn beauty stood.

〔耶ニハ黄花アソ、絲ニ翠菊アソ、溪邊ノ向日葵高秋ニ散ル〕

第八、 There is a special providence in the fall of a sparrow.

〔鳥雀ノ死スルモ特別ノ神慮アリ〕

第九、 The paths of glory lead but to the grave.

〔光輝アル道路モ墓所ニ通スルニ過ギス〕

第十、 In the spring of 1493, while the court was still at Barcelona, letters were received from Christopher Columbus, announcing his return to Spain, and the successful achievement of his great enterprise, by the discovery of land beyond the western ocean.

〔千四百九十三年ノ春、西班牙集會ガ尙ホ「バルセロナ」ニ在リシ時、「クリストフハー、コランパス」ヨリ、書翰到着シ、大企圖モ無難ニ成就シ、西海外ニ大陸ヲ發見スルコトヲ得タレバ、不日西班牙ニ歸ルコトヲ載セタリ〕

第二、 接續詞、

第九十二節 接續詞ノ用ハ文句ト文句トヲ連結シ、文句ノ成分ト成分トヲ連結スルニ在リ、而シテ同格接續詞ハ同類ノ文句ヲ連結シ、又タ同類ノ成分ヲ連結シ、附屬接續詞ハ主要命題ト羈屬命題トヲ連結ス、

第九十三節 接續詞ヲ解剖スルニハ、第一ニ其種類ヲ示シ、第二ニ何物ヲ連結スルヤヲ示ス、

練習第二十五

次ノ文句中ニ在テ伊太利文字ニテ書シタル接続詞ニ詞論的解剖ヲ應用セヨ。

第一、 When my time was expired, I worked my passage home; and glad I was to see Old England again, because I loved my country.

〔余カ在職年限已ニ滿シタルハ、故郷ニ向テ旅行セリ、而シテ余ハ故國ヲ愛シメガ故ニ、再ビ舊故ノ英倫ヲ見ルニ喜ビタリ〕

第二、 Some murmur when their sky is clear, And wholly bright to view, If one small speck of dark appear In their great heaven of blue.

〔晴空晴レテ豁然ト開キタル時、若シ一ノ黒点ヲ見ルハ、人怒ヲ怒ト者アリ〕

第三、 'Twas noon, And Helon knelt beside a stagnant pool In the lone wilderness. [正午ニ至リ]ノロンノ寂々タル停水池側ニ坐セリ

第四、 Millions of spiritual creatures walk the earth unseen, Both when we wake and when we sleep. [吾人ガ覺ムル時モ眠ムル時モ、幾百万ノ靈物ハ吾人ニ見ヘズシテ世界ヲ徘徊ス]

第九十四節 間投詞 間投詞ハ只ダ間投詞ナリト云フコトヲ示スノミニシテ足り、文句中ニ一モ文法的關係ヲ有セズ、

第二篇

文詞論

SYNTAX.

定義

第九十六節 文詞論 Syntax (希臘語ノ *syn* 及 *taxis* ヨリ來タリ、*syn* ハ

together (一處ニ)ナル義ニシテ、*taxis* ハ arrangement (排列)ナル義ナリ)ハ

文典ノ一分科ニシテ、文句中ニ排列スル語ノ相互ノ關係ヲ論ズ、

第九十六節 文法的關係 Grammatical relation. 文句中ニ排列スル語ノ

相互ノ關係ニ七種アリ、之ヲ文法的關係ト云フ左ニ舉グル者是レナリ、

第一、 主位關係 Subjective relation. 文句ノ主ガ其講説ニ對スル關係ナリ、

主ノ定義ハ第九節ヲ見ヨ、又講説ノ定義ハ第二十節ヲ見ヨ、

第二、 講説關係 Predicative relation. 講説ガ主ニ對スル關係ナリ、

第三、 屬性關係 Attributive relation. 繫屬語ガ其ノ爲メニ變化セラレタル語ニ對スル關

係ナリ、

繫屬語(第二百一十一節ヲ見ヨ)トハ名詞若クハ代名詞ノ意義ヲ變化セン爲メニ、之レニ附加シタル語ニシテ、其第一類ハ形容詞若クハ分辭ナリ、第二類ハ持格名詞ナリ、第三

類ハ同格名詞ナリ、

第四、補足關係 Complementary relation. 補足ガ不完全ナル動詞ニ對スル關係ナリ、

第五、副詞關係 Adverbial relation. 副詞ガ動詞等ニ對スル關係ナリ、

第六、代表關係 Representative relation. 代名詞ガ其ノ爲メニ代表セラレタル名詞若クハ

他ノ代名詞ニ對スル關係ナリ、

第七、連接關係 Connective relation. 前置詞若クハ接續詞ガ連接セラレタル語ニ對スル關係ナリ、

此等ニ左ノ者ヲ加フルニ得、

第八、絕對構造 Absolute construction 及不羈構造 Independent construction. 此二者ノ場

合ニ於ケル語ハ文句中他ノ部分ニ對シテ一モ文法的關係ヲ有スルコトナシ、

第九十七節 構造 Construction. 文詞論ニ在テハ語ノ構造ニ二個ノ式

様アリ、正規構造 Regular construction 及不規則構造 Irregular construction 是

レナリ、

第九十八節 正規構造トハ文句中ニ語ヲ連續排列スルニ一般ノ概

則ニ從フ者ナリ、而シテ此概則ヲ顯ハスニハ文詞論規則(後ニ掲グ)ナル

者ヲ以テス、

第九十九節 不規則構造ニ特別構造ト云ヒ、時アリテ又々俗話ト

稱スルハ、語ノ通常ノ式様又ハ意義ニ違ヒ、若クハ語ヲ連續ス

ルノ常法ニ從ハザル者ナリ、例之ヘハ、How do you do? 「他人ノ起居安否

ヲ問フニ用フ、又タハ This heart of mine 「是レハ語意ヲ強クシタル者ニシ

テ、通例ノ連續法ニ非ズ」ノ如キ是レナリ、

俗話ナル特別式様ヲ作クル不規則構造ハ國語諸則ノ應用ニ依ルナリ、其諸則中ノ最要ナ

ル者左ノ如シ、

法則第一、言語ヲ簡畧ニスル希望、

法則第二、構文法ヲ本來ノ範圍外ニ擴張スルコト、

法則第三、音調ヲ流滑ニスル希望、

注、此等樞要ナル原則ノ應用ハ文詞論規則ノ條下ニ述ブヘキ俗話上式様ニ系論スル

ヲ最良トス、

第二百節 省文 Ellipsis トハ文句ノ文法的構造ヲ完備ナラシムルニ必

需ナル一語若クハ數語ヲ省畧スルヲ云フ、其例左ノ如シ、

(一) Whose is this image and superscription? They say unto Him, Caesar's image and

superscription.]

「此ハ誰人ノ肖像及題字ナルヤト問フ時ニ「ミ―ザ―」ノナリト答ヘ、肖像及題字ナル語ヲ省略スルナリ」

(一) Hadst thou the same free will and power to stand? Thou hadst [the same free will add power to stand].

「汝ハ自由ノ意思ト自由ノ勢力ヲ有スルヤト問フ時、汝ガ有ストノミ答ヘ、他ノ語ヲ省略スルナリ」

### 第二百一節 過剩 Pleonasm トハ過分ニ語ヲ用ユルヲ云フ、其例左ノ如シ、

(一) The world *it* is empty, the heart will die.

〔按ニThe world is empty ト云フテ十分ナルベキヲ、更ニitナル語ヲ過分ニ添加シタルナリ〕

(二) You silver beams, Sleep they less sweetly on the cottage-hatch Than on the dome of kings?

〔按ニsilver beams sleep……ト云フテ十分解シ得ベキヲ、更ニtheyナル過剩語ヲ添加シタルナリ〕

### ○文詞論及分拆之注

第一、分拆 Analysis (詳言スレバ文詞上分拆 sentential analysis) ハ普通文詞論ノ一類ニシテ、何レノ國語ヲ問ハズ均シク之ヲ適用スベシ、蓋シ文詞論ニ在テハ品詞ノ文法的關係ヲ論ズレドモ、分拆ニ在テハ文句ヲ組成スル成分ノ論理的關係ヲ論ズ、語ヲ代ヘテ言ハ

ハ、分拆ハ思想表顯中ニ在ル成分相互ノ關係ヲ論ズル者ナリ、而シテ文詞論ト分拆ノ二ヲ總合シタル者ハ之ヲ文章學ト稱スベクシテ、即ハ言語學ノ一分科ナリ、斯ク文句ヲ查究スルニ二法アリテ、其差別ハ次例ヲ見テ知ルコト得ベシ、

Now fades the glimmering landscape on the sight.

文詞論

Now ハ一個ノ副詞ニシテ、fades ナル働詞ヲ變形ス、

Fades ハ規則自働詞ノ直說法現在ニシテ、

Landscape ナル名詞ニ一致シテ第三人稱單數ナリ、

「The ハ定冠詞ニシテ、landscape ヲ限定ス、」

Glimmering ハ節制形容詞ニシテ、landscape ヲ變形ス、

Landscape ハ單數中性ノ普通名詞ニシテ、

fades ノ主トナリ、主格ノ位地ニ在リ、

on ハ前置詞ニシテ、fades 及 sight ヲ連結ス、The (前ノ The ノ如シ)、

Sight ハ單數中性ノ普通名詞ニシテ、On ナル前置詞ニ屬シテ目的格ノ位地ニ在リ、分拆

此ノ一ノ單純文句ナリ、

文法上ノ主ハ landscape ナリ、

文法上ノ主ハ the 及び glimmering ナル形容詞ヨリ成レル成分ニ變形セラレ、the

glimmering landscape ナル論理上ノ主ヲ組成ス、

文法上ノ講説ハ fades ナリ、

文法上ノ講説ハ now ナル副詞ト on the sight ナル副詞狀熟語トニ變形セラレ、now fades on the sight ナル論理上ノ講説ヲ組成ス、

第二、文詞論ハ只ダ文句ノ文法的構造ヲ論ズルノミニシテ、而シテ其目的ハ只ダ一ニ止マル、何ゾヤ、曰ク、語ノ文法的關係ヲ管理スル規則アリテ、此規則ニ從ヒ文句ノ構造ヲ整頓シテ、誤錯ナカラシムルニ在リ、其他文章ノ華麗語氣ノ激昂等ノ事ニ至テハ文典ノ範圍外ニ在ル者ニシテ、修辭學ニ關涉スル者ナリトス、

### 文詞論之規則

#### 第一、主之關係

規則第一、働詞ノ主ハ主格ニ在リ、

#### 第二、講說關係

規則第二、働詞ハ人稱及數トモニ其主ト一致ス、

#### 第三、屬性關係

規則第三、形容詞及分辭ハ名詞若クハ代名詞ヲ變形ス、

規則第四、某名詞ガ異リタル事物ヲ名クル他ノ名詞ヲ變形スル時ハ持格ニ在リ、

規則第五、他ノ名詞若クハ代名詞ヲ説明スル爲ニ用ヒラレタル名詞若クハ代名詞ハ同格ニ置カルベシ、

#### 第四、補足關係

- 規則第六、他働詞ノ目的ハ目的格ニ在リ、
- 規則第七、自働詞若クハ受働詞ノ補足ニ用ヒラレタル名詞若クハ代名詞ハ主格ニ在リ、
- 第五、副詞關係
  - 規則第八、副詞ハ働詞若クハ形容詞若クハ他ノ副詞ヲ變形ス、
  - 第六、代表關係
    - 規則第九、代名詞ノ人稱、性、及數ハ其前位即ハチ代表セラレタル語ノ人稱、性、及數ト一致ス、
  - 第七、連接關係
    - 規則第十、其一、前置詞ハ名詞若クハ代名詞ヲ或ル他ノ語ニ連接ス、
    - 其二、前置詞ニ羈屬スル名詞若クハ代名詞ハ目的格ニ在リ、
    - 規則第十一、接續詞ハ語若クハ熟語若クハ命題ヲ連接ス、
  - 第八、絕對構造及不羈構造
    - 規則第十二、其一、名詞若クハ代名詞ニシテ其格ガ一切他ノ語ニ關涉セザル時ハ主格絕對ニ在リ、
    - 其二、主格不羈及間投詞ハ文句ノ他部ニ對シテ一モ文法的關係ヲ有セズ、
- 注、法及時ノ文詞論及働詞狀語ノ文詞論ハ後ニ掲グベキ働詞及働詞狀語ノ文詞論ナル

條下ヲ見ヨ、

第一、主之關係、

主之主格

規則第一、 勸詞ノ主ハ主格ニ在リ、

勸詞ノ主ハ名詞カ若クハ名詞ノ價值アル者ナリ、而シテ名詞ノ價值アル者ハ或ハ代名詞ナルキアリ、或ハ無限辭ナルキアリ、或ハ熟語ナルキアリ、成ハ命題ナルキアリ、其例左ノ如シ、

- 第一、 *God is our fortress.*
- 第二、 *He comes, the herald of a rising world.*
- 第三、 *To be contents his natural desire.*
- 第四、 *To see the sun is pleasant.*
- 第五、 *What one man owns cannot belong to another.*

練習第二十六、

次ノ文句ニ規則第一ヲ應用セヨ、

第一、 *Flashed all their sabres bare.*

〔彼等ノ拔刀ハ皆閃光ヲ發セリ〕

第二、 *When that the Poor have cried, Caesar hath wept.*

〔其可憐ノ人ガ號叫シタル時「ミューサー」ハ涙流セリ〕

第三、 *Beyond that I seek not to Penetrate veil.*

〔其他余ハ面帕ヲ透シテ見ナク〕

第四、 *She tore the azure robe of night, And set the stars of glory there.*

〔自然ハ碧絲ヲ破リ、藍天星々々〕

第五、 *To do aught good never will be our task.*

〔些細ノ善行ヲ爲スハ決シテ吾人ノ勞働ニ非ラザルベシ〕

第六、 *Jerusalem has derived some reputation from the number and importance of her memorable sieges.*

〔「エルサレム」ハ數回モ有名重大ノ圍城ヲ受ケタルヨリ世ニ聲名ヲ出サシム〕

第七、 *The service past, around the pious man, With ready zeal, each honest rustic ran.*

〔勤業止ムテ忠實ナル田夫ハ信心ナル人ノ周圍ヲ熱心ニ奔走ス〕

第八、 *Seasons return, but not to me returns Day, or the sweet approach of even or*



month.

「春秋循環シテ回ヘル時アリ、光陰一タビ去ツテ復タ還ヘラズ、朝ヤ夕ヤ吾ニ背ヒテ過ぎ、再近ツカント欲ストモ遂ニ得難シ」

第九、 Whatever is, is right.

「凡テノ物皆正シ」

第十、 Dust thou art, to dust returnest, Was not spoken of the soul.

「汝ハ塵埃ナリ、塵埃ニ復ヘン、魂魄ノ事何ノ説到メルヲ得ン」

### 規則第一之應用文詞論

甲、規則第一ノ破壞

其一、關係代名詞及疑問代名詞ノ主格ヲ用フヘキ處ニ目的格ヲ用フルト其例左ノ如シ、  
*Whom would you suppose stands first in our class?*

錯誤、目的格ノ whom チ stands ナル働詞ノ主トナセリ、然レドモ規則第一ニ憑リ之チ主格ナル who ニ改メザル可カラズ、是ヲ以テ左ノ要件アリ、

豫戒第一、關係代名詞若シハ疑問代名詞ト其働詞(前例ノ stands ノ如シ)トガ間挿ノ語(前例ノ would you suppose ノ如シ)ニ離隔セラルノトキハ其關係若クハ疑問代名詞ガ

主格ニ在ルトナ注意セザル可カラズ、

其二、働詞ヲ省略シタル時、其例左ノ如シ、

(一) *Is she as tall as me?*——Shakespeare.

「茲ニ me ト I ノ誤リミナ、之ヲ正シ且ハ省略シタル働詞ヲ補フ、Is she as tall as I am? ナリ」

(二) *She suffers hourly more than me.*——Swift.

「此文ニモ前ト一様ノ錯誤アリテ、之ヲ改正シ省略シタル働詞ヲ補綴ス、she suffers hourly more than I do so suffers ナリ」

(三) *The nations not so blessed as thee*——Thompson.

「此文ニ於テ thee ト thou ノ誤リミナ改正増補ス、the nations not blessed as thou art ナリ」

(四) *It is not for such as us to sit with the rulers of the land.*——Walker Scott.

「此文ニナ us ト we ノ誤リミナ改心補綴スル時、it is not for such as we are to sit with the rulers of the land. ナリ」

(五) *She was neither better nor wiser than you or me.*——Thackeray.

「茲ニ me ト I ノ誤シテ改正増補スル時、文尾ヲ you or I are トスベキナリ」

上ニ掲ゲタル文ハ皆大家ノ作ナルニモ拘ラス規則ヲ破壞シタリ、其誤謬ノ点ハ、省略シタル働詞ヲ補フテ忽チ明瞭ナルベシ、即チ第一ニ在テ as tall as me となリ、第二ニ在テ more than me となリ、第三ニ在テ not so blessed as thee となリ、第四、

ニ在テ such us we トナリ、第五ニ在テ than you or me we トナリ、何レモ其不正ノ点ヲ明示セリ、是ヲ以テ左ノ要件アリ、  
 豫戒第二、省畧シタル文句就中 than 若クハ as ナ前ニ有セル代名詞主ノ次ニ働詞ヲ省畧シタル場合ニ在テハ、其代名詞が主格式様ニ在ルベキヲ注意セザル可カラズ

乙、特別

特別第一、働詞ノ主ヲラシメ用ヲ示スル名詞若クハ代名詞ハ必ず一個ノ働詞ヲ有セザル可カラズ、但シ其働詞ハ場合アリテ之ヲ表示スベケレドモ、表示セズトモ了解セラハズキ時ニハ之ヲ省畧ス、

例 Two substantives, when they come together, and do not signify the same thing, the former must be in the genitive case.

此文ニ在テ substantives ナル名詞ハ某働詞ノ主タラシメン爲メニ用ヒラシタルコト明ナリ然ルニ此名詞ヲ主トスル働詞ヲ有セズ、故ニ此文ヲ校正センニハ一旦解ヒテ以テ再構スルヲ要ス、即ハチ左ノ如シ、

When two substantives not signifying the same together, the former must be in the genitive case;

「右ノ文意ヲ譯スルハ同事物ヲ指示セザル二個ノ實名詞が相共ニ並ア時ニ、前者ハ持格ニ在ラザル可カラズ」ト云

フ意ナリ、  
 特別第二、名詞若クハ代名詞ヲ主トスル働詞ハ構文上容易ニ補フヲ得ンキ場合ニ於テ之ヲ省畧スル可ナリ、其例左ノ如シ、

彼女ハ 6プロウ トキヲラガチ 2アル 3トキ7カレハ 8決メナイ  
 She will relent some time; he, never.  
 「是レ働詞ヲ省畧シタル者ニミナ完全ニ言ハズ he will never relent ナリ」

○特別式様及俗話式様之註

第一、I. 吾人ノ俗語ニ於テ It was impossible to recognize him ノ如キ構文ノモナル代名詞ハ働詞ヲ誘致スルノ用ヲ爲シ、其ノ真正ノ主(即ハチ論理的ノ主)ハ働詞ノ後ニ在リ、故ニ It was impossible to recognize him ハ To recognize him was impossible ニ等シトス、蓋シ此構文ニ於テハモテ豫料之主 anticipative subject トシテ解剖シ、真正ノ主ヲ論理的之主 logical subject トシテ解剖シテ可ナリ、

第二、There, there came to the beach a poor exile of Erin (A poor exile of Erin came to the beach ニ同シ)ノ如キ文句ニ在ル there ナル語ハ前ト同様ノ職ヲ有ス、而シテ there ハ豫料之主トシテ使用セラレタル代名詞狀之主 pronominal subject (若クハ填塞之主 expletivesubject) トシテ解剖スルヲ得、

第二、講説關係

働詞之一致

規則第二、働詞ハ人稱及數トモニ其主ト一致ス、  
 註、論理上此規則ノ必用ナルヲ詳説センニ、如何ナル文句ニ在テモ働詞及其主ハ必ズ  
 同一ノ事物ニ付テ言フガ故ニ此二者ガ共有スル文法的式様モ相互ニ一致セザル可カラ  
 ズ、若シ一致セザルキハ忽チ彼此衝突ノ憂アルベシ、而シテ爰ニ云フ働詞ト名詞若クハ  
 代名詞トガ共有スル文法的式様トハ人稱及ビ數ノ二ナリトス、蓋シ英倫語ノ働詞ハ語尾  
 ノ變化些少ナルガ故ニ、人稱及數ノ一致ヲ識別スベキ徴ハ甚ダ僅少ナルヲ疑ナシト雖  
 モ、働詞及主ノ間ニ存スル普通ノ關係ニ付テハ論理的一致アルノミナラズ、亦タ其一致  
 無カル可カラザルナリ、

練習第二十八

次ノ文句ニ於テ規則第二ヲ應用セヨ、

- 第一、 Father, thy hand Hath reared these venerable columns thou Didst weave this verdant roof.  
 [我が父ヨ、汝ノ手能ク斯ノ尊重スヘキ四柱ヲ建テ、又々斯ノ碧色ノ天幕ヲ織成セリ]
- 第二、 You say you are a better soldier.

【君云フ、君ハ良兵ナリト】

第三、 Then ye are only five.

【其時君等ハ只五ナリト】

第四、 Pleasantly rose next morning the sun on the village of Grand-Pre.

【翌朝旭日ハ「グランプリ」ノ村ニ快ク昇リト】

第五、 One morn a Peri at the gate of heaven stood disconsolate.

【「パー」ハ「ヘン」ノ門ヲ守ルニ立テ居リト】

第六、 Where De Solo was buried cannot be determined.

【「ソロ」ノ何處ニ埋葬セラルンヤ明瞭ナラズト】

第七、 A little learning is a dangerous thing; Drink deep, or taste the Pierian spring.

【淺學ハ危險ナル事ナリ、多ク飲ムニ非ン「パイリヤ」泉ヲ味フ勿ク深ク學ハザルハ學ヲナキニ若カヌト云フ詩】

第八、 He prayeth best who loveth best All things both great and small; For the dear God who loveth us, He made and loveth all.

【大トナク小トナンキ事万物ヲ最モ善ク愛スル者ハ最モ善ク造ル、蓋シ吾人ヲ愛スル自然ハ万物ヲ造リテ之ヲ愛セ

第九、 The Accusing Spirit, which flew up to heaven's chancery with the oath,

blushed as he gave it in; and the Recording Angel, as he wrote it down, dropped a tear upon the word, and blotted it out forever.

〔啓示神ノ聖書ヲ以テ天啓ニ飛揚シ、首ニ示シテ面ヲ覆ラシメ、而シテ記録神ノ手ヲ懸テニ記録スルニ當リ、色ロニ悲愴ノ涙ヲキエトシ落シ、涙痕永ク遺メテ消滅スルノナリ〕

第十、 We know that if we could cause this structure to ascend, not only till it reached the skies, but till it pierced them, its broad surfaces could still contain but part of that which, in an age of knowledge, hath already been spread over the earth, and which history changes itself with making known to all future times.

〔假令此建築ヲミナ青空ニ達シ、剝サシテ天門ヲ貫穿スルノナリ、而シテ其面積ノ總量時代既ニ宇宙ニ充塞シ、汝編ノ體面ヲ變メテ來世ニ知ラシムルキ、事物ノ只一部分ヲ含ムニ止マルノ吾人ノ知ル所ナリ〕

第十一、 Then methought the air grew denser, perfumed from an unseen censer Swung by Seraphim whose footfalls tinkled on the tufted floor. "Wretch," I cried, "thy God hath lent thee—by these angels he hath sent thee Respite—respite and nepenthe from thy memories of Lenore! Quaff, oh quaff this kind nepenthe and forget this lost Lenore!" Quoth the raven—"Nevermore!"

〔天使ノ足響ハ塵床ノ上ニ鳴リ、其香爐ヨリ奇香ヲ發シテ空氣ヲ穢メニ稠密トナレリト思ハシメ、余呼マ曰ク、窮困セル人ヨ、神ハ汝ニ天使ヲ送クリ、宥恕及ビ「リノーアー」ノ事ヲ忘レシムル葦草トナ汝ニ與ヘタリ、嗚呼汝此賜ヲ飲ミ、又々會テ經過シタル「リノーアー」ノ事ヲ忘ル可シ〕

### 規則第二之應用文詞論

甲、規則第二之破壞

其一、 働詞ガ其真正ノ主ト一致セズシテ、其主ヲ變形スル處ノ語又ハ熟語ト一致サレタル時、其例次ノ如シ、

His reputation was great, and somewhat more durable than that of similar poets have generally been.

錯誤、 複數式様ノ働詞 have ガ單數ノ主 that ト共ニ用ヒラレタレドモ、此レハ has ニ改正セザル可カラズ、蓋シ Poets ニ一致サセン爲メ have ナル働詞ヲ誘導シタル是其誤謬ヲ致セルノ原因ナリ、然レドモ of similar poets ナル熟語ハ that ノ繫屬語タルニ過ギザル故ニ、働詞ノ數ニハ少シモ關係セザルナリ、是ヲ以テ左ノ要件アリ、

豫戒第一、 主ノ繫屬語ハ働詞ノ數ヲ左右スルカナシ、

其二、 主ニ用ヒラレタル關係代名詞ノ數ヲ誤解スル時、次例ノ如シ、

This is one of the most valuable books that has appeared in any language.

錯誤、has ナル働詞ハ其主即ハチ that ナル關係代名詞ト一致セザル可カラズ、然ルニ今茲ニ that ハ複數ナリ(規則第九ヲ見ルベシ)、何トナレバ其前位ナル books ハ複數ナレバナリ、其故ニ複數ノ働詞 have ナ用ヒテ that have appeared ト改竄セザル可カラズ、是ヲ以テ左ノ要件アリ、

豫戒第二、働詞ノ主ガ關係代名詞ナル時ハ、其前位ニ依テ働詞ノ數ヲ定ム、

其三、働詞ヲ省略スルニ其宜シキヲ得ザル時、次例ノ如シ、

A bundle of papers was produced, and such particulars as the following detailed.

此文ニ在テ detailed ナル分詞ノ前ニ助働詞ヲ省略セリ、然レドモ此ノ省略ハ其宜シキヲ得ザル者ナリ、何トナレバ、今省略シタル處ニ was (produced ノ前ニ表ハサレタル者)ヲ補フ時ニハ、such particulars was detailed トナリテ、複數名詞ヲ單數働詞ニテ受クル如キ悖理ヲ生ズ、故ニ此處ニハ were ナル助働詞ヲ補ハザル可カラズ、是ヲ以テ左ノ要件アリ、  
豫戒第三、若シ試ニ働詞ヲ補填スル時ニ其主ト一致セザル時ニハ、働詞ヲ省略スルトテ許サズ

乙、規則第二ニ屬スル特別

特別第一、單數ノ主ノ二個或ハ二個以上ガ AND ニテ連接セラレ、之ヲ總括スレバ複數ノ事物トナルベキ時ハ、複數ノ働詞ヲ要ス、次例ノ如シ、

Mars and Jupiter have been visible this week.

第一、人稱、働詞ノ主ガ and ニテ連接セラレタル相異ナル人稱ノ二個若クハ二個以上ノ主ナル時ハ、其働詞ハ特別第一ニ依リ複數ナルヲ要ス、而シテ其働詞ノ人稱ハ次ノ二試験ニヨリ決定ス、

二個以上ノ主ノ一ガ第一人稱ナル時ハ、其働詞ハ第一人稱ノ複數トシテ解剖スベシ、  
He and I (||we) are to go. ノ如シ、

二個以上ノ主ノ一ガ第二人稱ニテ他ニ第一人稱ノ主有ラザル時ハ、其働詞ヲ第二人稱ノ複數ナリトシテ解剖ス、例之ヘバ You and James are going. ノ如シ、茲ニ are ハ第二人稱ノ複數トス、

第二、次ニ舉グルハ只一個事物ト見ルベクシテ複數事物ト見ルベカラザル數個結合ノ主ノ場合ナリ、斯ノ如キ場合ニ在テハ、其働詞ハ單數ナリ、

甲、一己人ヲ指示スル二個以上ノ名詞アル時、其例次ノ如シ、  
An eminent scholar and judicious critic has said.

是レ一人ニシテ學者ヨリ且ツ評論家タルヲ指セルナリ、  
乙、 同義ナルカ若クハ殆ンド同義ナル二個若クハ二個以上ノ名詞アル時、次例ノ如シ、

Wherein doth sit the dread and fear of kings.

丙、 each 若クハ every 若クハ no ナル定限ノ語ヲ用ヒテ各個別々ニ思考セラレタル二個若クハ二個以上ノ名詞アル時、左例ノ如シ、

(一) Each day and each hour brings its own duties.

(二) Every limb and every feature appears with its appropriate grace.

(三) No book and no paper was arranged.

丁、 一ノ複合事物ヲ表スル二個ノ名詞アル時、次例ノ如シ、

The wheel and axle was out of repair. 此句ハ The wheel together with the axle was out of repair ト云フニ同シ

戊、 二個ノ名詞アルトモ、其一ノ動作事狀ガ Not ナル副詞ニテ否拒セラレ、時、其例左ノ如シ、

Our own heart, and not other men's opinions, forms our true honor.

此構文中ニハ二個ノ命題ヲ含有セリ、即チ Our heart forms our true honor ナル命題ト、 Other men's opinions do not form our true honor ナル命題トナリ、而

シテ働詞ハ確定命題ノ主ニ一致シ、否拒命題ニ在テハ之ヲ略シタリ、

特別第二、 OR 若クハ NOR ニヨリ分別セラレタル二個若クハ二個以上ノ單數ノ主ハ單數ノ働詞ヲ要ス次例ノ如シ、

He or his brother has the book. Neither this nor that is the thing wanted. 數個ノ主ノ一ガ複數ナル時ハ、之ヲ働詞ニ接近セシメザル可カラズ、

而シテ其働詞モ亦々複數ナラザル可カラズ、次例ノ如シ、

Neither the emperor nor his generals were convinced.

特別第三、 OR 若クハ NOR ニテ連接セラレタル二個又ハ二個以上ノ主ニシテ相異リタル人稱ヲ指ス時ニ、其働詞ハ自己ニ最モ近キ主ト一致シ、他ノ人稱ト數ト之ヲ略スベシ左例ノ如シ、

(一) Either he or I am to blame.

(二) You or Thomas is mistaken.

(三) Neither Jane nor you study.

注、 以上ノ例文ニテ示シタル構造ハ最良ノ慣例ヲ解明シタル者ニアラザレバ之ヲ墨守ス可カラズ、一般ニ採用スルベキ良法ハ、働詞ヲ第一ノ主ト並置シ、第二ノ主ニ

モ之ニ一致スベキ式様ノ働詞ヲ再用スルカ、若クハ全ク構造法ヲ變化スル是レナリ、  
次例ノ如シ、

(一) Either he is to blame or I am.

(二) You are mistaken or Thomas is.

(三) Jane does not study, nor do you.

特別第四、異リタル人稱ヲ示ス二個ノ主アリテ、其一ハ動作事狀ヲ確定シ、其一ハ之否ヲ拒スベキ時ニハ、其働詞ノ人稱及ビ數ハ確定セラルノ主ト一致ス、其例左ノ如シ

(一) He, and not I, is chosen.

(二) I, and not they, am to go.

特別第五、集合名詞(著シク一個体タルヲナ想思セシムル者)ハ單數ノ働詞ヲ要ス、次例ノ如シ、

The army was victorious.

數多之名詞(著シク複數タルヲナ想思セシムル者)ハ複數ノ働詞ヲ要ス、次例ノ如シ、

The public are often deceived by false appearances.

集合名詞及數多之名詞ノ定義ハ詞論名詞ノ章中ノ名詞種別之注ヲ見ルベシ、

注、集合名詞及數多之名詞ニ關シテハ其慣例定カナラズシテ、名家ト雖ドモ互ニ其黑白ヲ争ヒ、氷炭相容レザルガ如シ、

例、 The fleet are under orders to set sail.

錯誤、 fleetハ集合名詞ナレハ單數ノ働詞ヲ要ス、然ルニ之ヲ受クルニ areナル複數働詞アリ、故ニ之ヲ改竄シテ The fleet is under orders to set sailトセザル可カラズ、

例、 The peasantry goes barefoot.

錯誤、 peasantryハ數多ノ名詞ナレハ複數ノ働詞ヲ要ス、然ルニ goesハ單數式様ナリ、故ニ之ヲ改メテ The peasantry go barefootトセザル可カラズ、

特別第六、單一ノ事物ニ與ハタル複數ノ稱号ハ單數ノ働詞ヲ要ス、次例ノ如シ、

(一) Johnson's "Lives of the Poets" is an admirable work.

〔「ジョンソン」ガ著シタル詩家之傳記ト云フ書ハ賞讃スベキ者ナリ〕

(二) The United States occupies the largest part of North America.

〔合衆國ハ北亞米利加洲ノ大半ヲ占有ス〕

注、合衆國ノ憲法中ニハ them又ハ their等ノ複數式様ノ代名詞ヲ以テ合衆國ナル

名詞ヲ代表シタレドモ、方今ハ特別第六ニ從ヒテ單數トスルノ傾向アリ、  
特別第七、如何ナル文句ニ於テモ名詞ヲ省略シ、而カモ一個以上ノ事物アルノ意ヲ含ミ  
タル時ハ、其働詞ヲ複數トナス、其例左ノ如シ、

(一) The Second and the Third Epistle of John contain each  
a single chapter.

〔「サムン」ヲ第二回ノ書信ト第三回ノ書信トハ各一章宛チ含ム〕

(二) A Herary, a scientific, a wealthy, and a poor man are to  
take part in the meeting.

〔儒者ト學者ト富人ト貧人トハ皆チ會合ニ與カラザル可ラズ〕

斯ノ如キ場合ニ在テ含蓄シテ隱レタル名詞ヲ補填スベク、而シテ其働詞ハ and ニテ連  
接セラレタル數個ノ主ト複數ニテ一致セリトシテ解剖セラル、ナリ、

特別第八、各個ノ定働詞ハ明示サレタルカ若クハ暗知サレタル主チ有セザル可カラズ、

二個若クハ二個以上ノ働詞ガ同一ノ構文中ニ連接セラレ、第一ノ働詞ノミノ主チ表示  
スレバ餘ハ言外ニ了解セラル、ヘキ場合ニ在テハ、主チ省略スルコトナ許ス可シ、之ヲ例  
スルニ James reads and writes ノ如キ是レニシテ、 James reads and James  
writes ト云フニ同シ、然レドモ若シ主ガ含有セラレズトカ、一構文中ニ働詞ガ連接セ

ラレタルニ非ラザル時ニハ、各個ノ働詞ハ各個ノ主チ有セザル可カラズ、

例、 It is thinking makes what we read ours.

錯誤、 makes ナル定働詞ハ明示セラレタル主チモ亦タ暗知セラルヘキ主チモ有セズ、

故ニ其前ニ that ナル關係代名詞ハ補ヒテ主トナサザル可カラズ、

### 特別式樣及俗話式樣之註

第一、 None—any—all 等、 None, any, all, such 等ノ如キ不定代名詞ハ、一個事物ニ  
付テ言フヤ若クハ複數ノ事物ニ付テ言フヤニ關シテ、或ハ單數ノ働詞ヲ取り、或ハ複數ノ  
働詞ヲ取ル其例左ノ如シ、

None but the brave deserves the fair.

茲ニ none ハ一個ノ事物ニ付テ言フヤハ者ニハ、 no one ト同意ナリ、

None of my friends were at home.

茲ニ none ハ複數事物ニ付テ言フヤハ者ニチ、

all were not-at-home ノ義ナリ、

All is peaceful and still.

茲ニ all ハ一個ノ事物ニ付テ言フヤ、 everything ト云フ義ナリ、

All fear, none did you, and few understand.



意ニ二三ハ複數ニテ all persons ノ意ヲ有シ、 none ヲ複數ニ付テ言ヒ、 no persons ノ意ヲ有シ、 few 亦 few persons ノ意ヲ有ス、

第二、 働詞ノ前ニ主アリ、後ニ講說主格アル者、 The wages of sin is death ナル文句ニ於ケルガ如ク、 to be ナル働詞ガ主ノ主格ト講說主格トノ間ニ夾マル時、働詞ガ單數タルベキヤ複數タルベキヤヲ決スルニ疑念ノ起ラザル無キニ非ズ、何トナレバ、時トシテハ文句ノ順序ヲ顛倒スルコトアルヲ以テ、其時數ノ變化スルコト有ルガ故ナリ、此ノ場合ニ在テハ主格名詞ガ文句中ニ通常排列スル語ノ順序ニ從ツテ其位置ヲ有スルニモセヨ、之ヲ講說名詞ナリト見做シ、以テ眞成ノ主ハ何レナリヤ、之レニ一致スル働詞ハ何レナリヤヲ決定スルナリ、例之ヘハ上ニ掲ゲタル句中ニ於テ、道理上主トナルベキ者ハ death ニシテ、其働詞ハ單數ナルベシ、故ニ wages ハ講說主格ナリ、

第三、 截斷之主、働詞ガ其主ヲ兩分スル時、其働詞ノ數ハ第一ノ主ニ一致シ、他ノ種ノ働詞ハ言外ニ暗知セラル、者トス、其例次ノ如シ、

[The earth is the Lord's, and the fulness thereof.] 是レ其外貌ハ特別第一ヲ破レル者ナレドモ、吾人ガ國語ノ俗話ニ在テハ之ヲ許セリ、而シテ解剖ニ於テハ畧セラレタル働詞ヲ補填スベシ、

第四、 詩學上ノ自由、 詩學ニ於テハ、豫戒第三ノ原則ニ屢々違犯スルコトアリテ、省略シタル働詞ヲ補フトモ、其主ニ一致セザルコトアリ、左例ノ如シ、

Abi then and there was hurrying to and fro, And [there were] gathering tears  
and [there were] tremblings of distress, And [there were] cheeks all pale, which but  
an hour ago Blushed at the praise of their own loveliness.

斯ノ如キ文句ノ解剖ニハ略シタル働詞ヲ補ナヒ、其主ニ一致スベキ式樣ヲ有セシムベシ、蓋シ此構文ハ獨リ詩學上ニノミ許スベキモ、尋常ノ散文ニハ之ヲ許サズ、

第五、 重複之主、散文ニ於テハ、名詞及ビ其名詞ヲ代表スル人代名詞ヲ同一ノ働詞ノ主ニ用フルハ宜シカラズ、但シ二者ガ同格ナル時ハ然ラズ、然リト雖ドモ詩學ニ於テ此不規則ノ構文ハ通常アルコトナリ、次例ノ如シ、

(一) The Count he was left to the vulture and hound.  
(二) For the deck, it was their fields of fame.

### 第三、 屬性關係

#### 第一項 形容詞及分詞

規則第三、 形容詞及分詞ハ名詞若クハ代名詞ヲ變形ス、

第一、 愛ニ用ヒタル變形 modifies ナル語ハ、關係ス、限界ス、屬スルナル語ト同意義ニシテ、形容詞及分詞ハ警屬ノ語ナリト云フコト示ス爲メ、各異ノ文法學家ガ用ヒタル語ニ同シ、

第二、 不完成ナル勳詞ノ補足ニ用ヒラレタル形容詞ハ、 兩様ノ職務ヲ有ス即ハチ補足ノ職ト、 變形ノ職ト是レナリ、

練習第二十、

次ノ文句ニ規則第ニテ應用セヨ、

- 第一、 Outflew Millions of flaming swords, drawn from the thighs of mighty cherubim.
  - 〔幾百万ノ鋭劍ハ天神ノ大腿ヨリ閃發セリ〕
- 第二、 With a slow and noiseless footstep Comes that messenger divine.
  - 〔天使ハ遅々トメナ静カニ來ハシ〕
- 第三、 The hawthorn bush, with seats beneath the shade For talking age and whisperinglovers made.
  - 〔可ニ戀語メント母中ノ爲メニ花叢陰裏ニ坐テ談ヌタリ〕
- 第四、 The younger guest purloined the glittering prize.
  - 〔若年ノ客人ハ美寶ヲ擲取ナリ〕
- 第五、 The service past, around the pious man, With steady zeal each honest rustic ran.
  - 〔祭事ノ終ルヤ、 忠實ナル俗父ハ競フテ信者ノ周圍ヲ走ルリ〕

第六、 The wretch, concentrated all in self, Living, shall forfeit renown, And doubly dying, shall go down To the vile dust from whence he sprung. Unwept, unhoored, and unsung.

〔我恣ニ執着スル窮漢ハ、 一タビニ蘇シテ其美名ヲ挽ミ一タビニ死シテ汚座ニ歸シ、 復タ生キテ人ノ爲メニ嘆カレズ、 復タ忽チ耻辱ヲ受ケテ昔界ニ沈ム〕

第七、 The patient face that once had lain upon the bed was glorified and radiant; but his heart found out his sister among all the host.

〔尊テ忍辱ヲ以テ潜匿シタリシ顔ハ忽チ奇光ヲ受ケ、 忽チ美光ヲ發セリ、 然レニ今ヤ其姉妹ヤ心ノ治イラザルヲ以テ、 恰モ敵軍ノ知ンニ見ラレタリ〕

第八、 First in war, first in peace, and first in the hearts of his countrymen, Washington was second to none in the humble and endearing scenes of private life.

〔ワシントン〕ハ戦争ニモ第一ノ人ナリ、 和戦ニモ第一ノ人ナリ、 又タ國人ノ心ノ第一ノ人ナリ、 然モ平生人間生活中鄙シキ業ニ於テモ衆人ト比シテ第二等ニ下リシ人ニアラズ〕

第九、 How dear to this heart are the scenes of my childhood, When fond recollection presents them to view!

〔痴情切ニミテ往日ヲ回想シ、 吾ガ兒子ノ面容眼前ニ浮ビ出ルニ當テヤ、 吾ガ兒子ニ於ケル愛心ノ切ナルコト何ゾ限ラン〕

第十、 This day I was gratified with what I had often desired to witness—the condition of the sea in a tempest. I had contemplated the ocean in all its other phases, and they are almost innumerable. At one time it is seen reposing in perfect stillness under the blue sky and bright sun. At another, slightly ruffled, and then its motion causes his rays to tremble and dance broken fragments of silvery or golden light—and the sight is dazzled by following track from whence his beams are reflected—while all besides seems to frown in the darkness of its ripple.

〔余ハ從來颶風中ノ海ヲ一見セント欲セシガ、此日始メテ其實況ヲ見ルコトヲ得テ、大ニ喜ベリ、余ハ又々其他ノ現象ヲモ視察シタリシガ、實ニ千態万狀比喩スルニ由ナカリキ、一時ハ靜穩席ヲ鋪クガ加ク、青空ヲ透ニ控ヘテ、射ルガ如キ日光ヲ深ハシ、一時ハ波浪輕ク起リテ或ハ振ヒ或ハ踊リ、金色銀光碎波ニ從ツテ一時ニ閃發シ、反照ノ光人目ヲ眩マサシム、此時ニ當テ眼ヲ轉シテ遠近ヲ眺ムレバ、却ツテ見ル波濤滄滄トシテ縹緲ヲ疊ミ、限りナキ感慨胸裡ニ涌出ス〕

規則第之應用文詞論

注、 英倫語ノ形容詞ハ性ト數ト格トナ示スベキ語尾變化ヲ有セザルガ故ニ、名詞ニ對シテ精細ノ一致ヲ有セズ、羅句ヤ希臘ヤ、日耳曼ヤ佛朗西ノ形容詞ハ一々此一致ヲ有セ

リ、故ニ英倫語ニ於テ規則第三ノ破壞甚ダ稀ニ起ル、然レドモ形容詞中ニハ數ノ關係ヲ有スル者モアリ、又々構文ノ特性ヲ示ス者モアルガ故ニ、多クノ特則ヲ作ルベキトナレリ、

規則第三ニ屬スル特則

第一、 代名詞狀形容詞

特則第一、 一個又ハ數個ノ意ヲ有スル形容詞ノ數ハ、其名詞ト一致セザルベカラズ、其例左ノ如シ、

*That sort, those sorts, This hand, these hands.*

第一、 分量ヲ示ス不定形容詞ハ單數名詞ノ前ニ使用シ、一個以上ノ數ヲ示ス不定形容詞ハ複數名詞ノ前ニ使用セザル可カラズ左ノ如シ、

多	數	many	數
much		many	
little		few	
less		fewer	
least		fewest	

第二、 不定形容詞 all, some, no, any, other ハ單數名詞ニモ複數名詞ニモ一致ス、

特別第二、 Each, every, either, neither ナル形容詞ハ只マ單數名詞ニノミ用ヒラル、左例ノ如シ、

each man, every day, either side, neither bank. Either 及 neither ハ只マ二個ノ事物中ノ一個ヲ示スノミ、若シ三個以上ノ事物中ノ一個ヲ示サント欲セバ、 any 又ハ any one 及 a none 又ハ no one ナ用ユルシ、故ニ either of the three トセズシテ、 any of the three 若シハ any one of the three トシ、 neither of the four トセズシテ、 None 若シハ no one of the four トスルシ、

注意、 Either ハ both 若シハ each ノ代リニ用非ラルノナシ、 故ニ on each side 若シハ on both sides ナ示リントスル時ニ、 On either side is level ten ノ如キ語ヲ用フルハ妥當ナラズシテ、甚マ粗漏ナル用語ナリトス、

第一、 冠辭

特別第三、 二個若シハ二個以上ノ形容詞ガ一事物ヲ示ス名詞ニ關係スル時ニハ、 冠詞チ第一形容詞ノ前ニ用ユルノミ、 然レドモ二個若シハ二個以上ノ事物ヲ示サント欲スルトキハ冠辭チ反覆使用セザル可カラズ、

例ハ、 a tall, old, fat man ト言フ時ハ只マ一個ノ人ヲ示セルニシテ、 高クシテ老ヒタル肥滿ノ人ト云フナリ、 然レドモ冠辭チ復用シテ a tall, an old, and a fat man ト言フ

時ハ、 三個ノ人ヲ示セルニテ、 高キ人ト老ヒタル人ト肥滿ナル人ト云フナリ、

例、 It is difficult in some cases to distinguish between an interrogative and exclamatory sentence.

錯誤、 此文ニハ二個ノ sentence ナ示サント欲セルナリ、 故ニ各個名詞ノ前ニ冠辭チ使用セザル可カラズ、 即ハチ between an interrogative and an exclamatory sentence ト言ハザル可カラズ、

注意、 然レドモ時アツテ語氣チ強クスル爲ニ、 一個事物ニ冠辭チ復用スルコアリ、 例之ハ、 He returned a sadder and a wiser man ノ如キ是レナリ、 斯ノ如キ例外ノ場合ニ於テハ、 前後ノ文脈チ味ヒテ一個事物ナルヤ否ヤチ判別スルシ、

例、 There is a difference between a liberal and a prodigal hand. 是レ特別第三ニ所謂二個若シハ二個以上ノ事物ヲ示サント欲スル時ハ冠詞チ反覆使用セザル可カラズナル規則ニ據ル者ニシテ、 一ノ手ハ liberal [寛大ナル]ナルニ對シ、 一ノ手ハ prodigal [奢華ナル]ナリ、 是ヲ以テ茲ニハ二事物ヲ示スノ意アリテ、 両方ノ形容詞ニ冠詞チ用ユルナリ、

例、 There is about the whole book a vehement, contentious, replying manner. 此文句ハ錯誤ナクシテ、 a チ復用スルコトヲ要セズ、 何トナレハ茲ニ説ク所ノ者ハ只一ノ manner ニチ示セルニシテ、 a manner vehement, contentious, and replying ト云フコト

ナレバナリ、

特別第四、一個ノ人ヲ示スニ二個若クハ二個以上ノ名詞ヲ用フル時、第一形容詞ニノミ冠詞ヲ用フ、

A priest and king ト云ハバ一人ニシテ両様ノ職ヲ帶グルヲ示セル者ニシテ、*a priest and a king* ト言ハバ、各異ノ人が各職務ヲ負ヘルコトノ意ヲ有ス、

又々一個ノ名詞ニ二個若クハ二個以上ノ同格名詞ヲ連結スル時ニモ、只ダ第一同格名詞ノ前ニ冠詞ヲ用フルノミ、例之ハ Johnson, the bookseller and stationer ト云ハバ、一人ノ Johnson ニシテ、bookseller ヲリ、stationer ヲルコトヲ示セルナリ、

特別第五、相互ニ比較スルキニ二個ノ名詞ガ、等シク同人若クハ同事物ニ關スル時、前ノ名詞ニノミ冠詞ヲ附シ、後ノ名詞ニ之ヲ附セズ、然レドモ若シ其二名詞ガ相異タル人若クハ事物ニ關スル時ハ、各名詞ニ冠詞ヲ用ヒザル可カラズ、

(一) He would make a better statesman than lawyer.

(二) He would make a better statesman than a lawyer.

第一例ニ於テ、lawyer 及 a statesman ハ共ニ同一ノ人ニ關シ、He would make a better statesman than he would make a lawyer [彼ハ法律家トナランヨリ寧ロ政治家トナラン]ト同意ナリ、然ルニ第二例ニ於テハ lawyer 及 a statesman ナルニ二名詞ハ相異リ

タル二人ニ關シ、He would make a better statesman than a lawyer would make. [法律

家ガ政治家トナルヨリ彼ハ更ニ善良ノ政治家トナラン]ト云フ意ナリ、

特別第六、同式様ノ不定冠辭ガ數個ノ名詞ニ一致セザル時ハ、[a ナル冠辭ハ on ニ一

致セズ、an ナル冠辭ハ paper ニ一致セザル等はレナリ]各名詞ニ一一冠辭ヲ附スルヲ要ス、

例之ハ a man, woman, and child ト云ハバ、冠辭ノ式様ト各名詞ト一致スレドモ、*a cow, ox, and pig* ト云ハバ、冠辭ノ式様ト各名詞ト一致セズシテ、若シ a ナル冠辭ヲ各名詞ニ補ハバ a cow, an ox ナル背理ノ者ヲ得ルガ故ニ、宜シカラズ、

### 第二 比較級及最大級之構造

特別第七、比較級ハ二個ノ事物若クハ事物ノ二種類ヲ相互ニ比較スル時ニ、之ヲ用フ最

大級ハ二個以上ノ事物ヲ比較スル時ニ之ヲ用フ、其例左ノ如シ、

Iron is harder than wood.

[二物相比較ス] Could make the worse appear the better reason.

[二事相比較ス]

Oh! bloodiest picture in the book of time.

〔一物ヲ數多ノ物ニ比較ス〕

特別第八、比較級ヲ用フル時ニ、比較ノ後項ハ前項ヲ包含セザルヲ常トス、然レドモ最大級ヲ用フル時ニ、後項ハ常ニ前項ヲ包含セザル可カラズ、左例ノ如シ、

Russia is larger than any other county in Europe.

〔前項ナル larger country ノ後項ナル any other country ノ中ニ包含セラズ〕

Russia is the largest country [of all countries] in Europe.

〔前項ナル largest country ノ後項ナル all countries 中ニ包含ス〕

次ノ文句ハ特別第三ノ破壊ノ点ヲ明解ス、

第一例 Bismarck is greater than any German statesman.

Bismarck モ一個ノ日耳曼政治家ニシテ、any German statesman ハ何レノ日耳曼政治家ヲモ指スヲ得ベキ故ニ、此文句ハ「ビスマルク」ハ「ビスマルク」ヨリモ大ナル政治家ナルヲ確定セルナリ、是レ一ノ不合理ナリ、故ニ之ヲ改メテ Bismarck is greater than any other German statesman トスルカ、若シハ其後部ヲ than all other German statesman トセザル可カラズ、是ニ於テ始メテ該則ニ合ヒ、than any other ナル熟語ノ爲メニ「ビスマルク」ヲ其比較ノ人物外ニ除キ出シタリ、然レドモ Bismarck is greater than any Chinese statesman ト言フヲ得、何トナレバ「ビスマルク」ハ支那人ニ非ザレバナリ、

第二例 Shakspeare is the most admired of all the yother English poets. 最大級ヲ用

フル時ニ、比較ノ後項ハ常ニ前項ヲ包含セザル可カラズト云フ規則ヲ破ラザラン爲メニ、other ナル語ヲ除去シ、Shakspeare is the most admired of all English poets トセザル可カラズ、

特別第九、同一ノ語ニ比較級若シハ最大級ノ重複シタル式様ヲ用ニ可カラズ、左例ノ如シ、

the strictest sect. 之ヲ誤ツテ the most strictest sect トスベカラズ、何トナレバ strictest ナル字ハ、已ニ strict ノ最大級ナルヲ以テ、之レニ most ナル語ヲ加フレバ最大級ノ式様重複スレバナリ、 the worse result 之ヲ誤ツテ the worsser result トスル可カラズ、worse ナル語ハ、已ニ bad 若シハ evil ノ比較級ナレバナリ、

#### 第四、形容詞ヲ副詞ニ用フル誤

特別第十、構文上副詞ヲ要スル處ニ、形容詞ヲ用エベカラズ、

第一、構文ニ於テ状態ヲ表ハスベキ時ニハ、副詞ヲ要ス、

例第一、He arose slow from the ground, and resumed his journey.

錯誤、是レ起立スルノ状態ヲ示サント欲スル者ナレバ、副詞ヲ用ヒ slow ヲ slowly ト改

メザル可カラズ、

例第二、It is easier said than done. 此文モ改メテ It is more easily

said than done トセザル可カラズ、

第二、特別第十ニ示シタル豫戒ハ、自働詞若シハ他働詞ノ補足ニ用ヒ、及ビ主ヲ變形スルニ用ヒタル形容詞ニモ適用スベキト思フ可カラズ、例之ヘハ Apples taste sweet. ハ誤用ニ非ラザル如キ是レナリ、尙ホ規則第八之應用文詞論ノ下ナル特別第二ヲ參見スベシ、

第三、特別第十二戒メタル誤謬ニ類シタル誤ハ、as ナル接続詞ノ代リニ Like ナ誤用スルノ例ヲ以テ説明セラル、即チ左ノ如シ、

Victory must end in possession, like toil in sleep.

此文ニ於テ Like ヲ as トスベシ、即ハチ victory must end in possession, as [does] toil in sleep ナリ、

特別式樣及俗話式樣之注、

第一、冠辭ニ非ザル者 或ル場合ニ於テハ、冠辭ノ如ク見ユレドモ、其實然ラザル者アリ、例之ヘハ twice a week ノ a ハ冠辭ニ非ズシテ、本ト on ナル前置詞ノ簡畧ニナリタル者ナリシナリ、(又々 aboard ハ on board ニ同一ナルトチ考ヘヨ)、此ノ構文ニ在テハ、a week ナ副詞狀ノ熟語トシ解剖スルチ善トス、

the more the merrier ノ如キ構文ノ the ナル語ハ、精細ニ言ヘハ冠辭ニ非ラズ、(前

篇第六章副詞ノ下ヲ見テ其眞性ヲ知ル可シ)、

第二、"Many a" 等、不定冠辭ハ名詞ニ關係スル形容詞ノ前ニ位スルチ通例トスレドモ、吾人ノ俗話ニ在テ、many, what 若クハ such ナル形容詞ト共ニ用フルニ當テハ、此慣例ニ準據セザルトチ許セリ、左例ノ如シ、

Full many a flower is born to blush unseen. What a price of work is man. Such a Roman.

many a ハ俗話的ニ用ヒタル複雜形容詞トシテ之ヲ解剖スルチ適當トス、

第三、A hundred 等、hundred, thousand, pair, dozen 等ノ語ハ不定冠辭ト共ニ使用スルトチ得ベシ、是レ此等ノ語ハ元來名詞ナルガ故ナリ、例之ヘハ a hundred ノ如シ、而シテ斯ノ如キ構造ハ俗語ニ屬セリ、蓋シ「アングロ、サンソン」語ニ在テ、hundred thousand 等ハ持格ノ名詞ヲ次ニ有シ、今日吾人ガ a hundred of sheep ト云フガ如クナリシナリ、(吾人ハ a dozen men 等ノ語ヲ使用スレドモ、a pair of stockings トカ a score of men トカノ語ヲ今日ニモ尙ホ使用スルトチ見ルベシ)、

解剖ニ於テハ a hundred 等ハ複雜形容詞ヲ作レリトスルチ適當トス、

第四、"First two" 等、二個ノ數量形容詞ガ一個ノ名詞ニ係ル時、順數ガ計數ノ前ニ在ルチ一般ノ法トス、the first two chapters of Mathew 又ハ the last three stanzas of the hymn ノ如シ、蓋シ精細ニ言ヘハ two first chapters トカ three

last stanzas トカ云フベキ理ナキコ明ナリ、何トナレバ第一ノ章ハ只一個アルノミニシテ、最後ノ句モ只一個アルノミナレバナリ、故ニ計數ヲ順數ノ次ニ置クヲ要スルナリ、然レドモ two first 若クハ three last 等ノ語句ガ文中ニ起ルコアリ、而シテ其意義ハ固ヨリ前ニ示シタル者ト同ツカラズ、例ヘバ二種ノ連續事物ノ各ノ最初ノ事物ヲ合稱スル件 two first ト云ヒ、三種ノ連續事物ノ名最後ノ事物ヲ取リテ之ヲ合稱スル時 three last ト云フガ如キ是レナリ、

假リニ某學校ニ上下ノ二級アリトセンニ上級ノ最上席ヲ占ムル生徒ト、下級ノ最上席ヲ占ムル生徒トヲ合セテ、the two first ト名、又々上中下三級アル時ニハ、各級ノ最下席ニ在ル三人ノ生徒ヲ the three last ト稱スルコト得ルナリ、

第五、重複ノ比較級及最大級、我國古昔ノ文章家ノ中ニハ、語勢ヲ強クセンガ爲メニ比較級若クハ最大級ヲ適用セシコトアリ、其例左ノ如シ、

The unkindest beast more kinder than mankind——Shakespeare.

This was the most unkindest cut of all——Ibid.

斯ノ如キ構文ハ曾テ善美ノ語法ナリトセシコトアレドモ、近代ノ慣例ニ背ケリ、

### 第二項 持格之名詞

規則第四、其名詞ガ異リタル事物ヲ名クル他ノ名詞ヲ變形スル時ハ持格ニ在リ、man's life 又ハ the boy's books ノ如シ、持格ノ名詞ガ他ノ名詞ニ對シテ屬性關係ヲ有スル時ハ、此ノ他ノ名詞ヲ主項 principal term ト稱スルコト得、

### 練習第三十二

次ノ文句ニ規則第四ヲ應用セヨ、

第一、 Now Jove suspends his golden scales in air, Weighs the men's wit against the lady's hair.

〔今「ジョー」神ノ空中ニ金秤ヲ吊シ、汝等ノ才智ヲ以テ人間ノ智慧ヲ秤ス〕

第二、 Little-minded people's thoughts move in such small circles that five minutes' conversation gives you an arc long enough to determine their whole curve.

〔狭量ナル人ノ思想ハ細小ナル圈内ニ運動スルガ故ニ、五分時ノ間對話スル時ハ容易ニ其度量ヲ測リ得ニシ〕

第三、 I inhaled the violet's breath.

〔余ハ紫菀ノ香氣ヲ吸收セリ〕

第四、 Tell me what thy lordly name is on the Night's Plutonian shore.



「ナイト」ノ「マ」ト「ニ」ヲ「フ」ニアル故ノ高名ヲ「フ」

第五、 The spider's thread is cable to man's tie on earthly bliss.

「此蜘蛛ノ人同キミテ現世ノ福祥ヲ受ケメン爲メノ繩ナリ」

第六、 Richer by far is the heart's adornation.

「心ノ榮華ハ遠ニ富メル者ナリ」

第七、 'Twas made of the white snail's pearly shell.

「是ハ白蝸牛ノ透明ナル殻ヨリ造ラレリ」

第八、 Quench the timber's falling embers, Quench the red leaves in December's

Hoary rime and chilling spray.

「落レル木材ノ灰燼ヲ滅スヘシ、極冬ノ白霜ト凍レル水煙ニ落レル紅葉ヲ掃ケ」

第九、 Let all the ends thou ain'st.

「汝ガ正鵠トスル者ハ皆ナ汝ノ國人ノ正鵠タラシムヘシ、汝ノ恩者ノ正鵠タラシムヘシ又々汝ノ真理ノ正鵠タラシムヘシ」

第十、 O, well for the fisherman's boy, That he shouts with his sister at play,

「嗚呼善哉、漁父ノ子ノ爲メナル哉、彼ノ子ハ遊ブ姉妹ト共ニ歡喜ノ聲ヲ發セリ」

### 規則第四之應用文詞論

規則第四ニ屬スル特別、

特別第一、 主項ハ十分明瞭ナル時屢之ヲ省略ス。 "Ball and Black's [store]"; "the Court of St. James's [palace]"; "from Shiles's pocket into Nokes's [pocket]" ノ如シ、

特別第二、 共同所有權ガ二人若クハ二人以上ニ屬スル時ニハ只最後ノ人名ノミ持格ノ符號「s」ヲ有ス。 Liddell and Sooll's Greek-English Lexicon 「リットン」及「スコット」兩氏ノ

希臘英倫語字彙」ノ如シ、

斯ノ如キ場合ニ於テハ、持格符號ハ只最后ノ名詞ニノミ附加シタレバ、之ヲ持格ニ在ル共同項トシテ解剖スルヲ得、

特別第三、 各異ノ所有權ガ二人若クハ二人以上ニ屬スル時ハ、各人名ガ持格ノ式樣ヲ有セザル可カラズ。 Webster's and Worcester's dictionaries 「ウェブスター」氏ノ字彙及「ウ

スター」氏ノ字彙」ノ如シ、  
斯ノ如キ場合ニ在テ、解剖スル時ニ各持格名詞ノ次ニ主項ヲ補フテ可ナリ、

規則第四、 所有權ガ一個人ニノミ屬シ、其人ニ二個若クハ二個以上ノ同格名詞ガ附着スル時ハ主項( )表示セラレタルモ、省略セラレタルニモ拘ハラズニ接スル同格名詞ニノミ持格符號ヲ附ス。 "At Smith, the bookseller's [store]" 又 "For my servant David's sake"

ノ如シ、

斯ノ如キ場合ニ在テハ、同格之規則(規則第五ヲ見ヨ)ニ從ヒ、一個若シハ二個以上ノ名詞

ヲ皆ナ持格名詞ナリトシテ解剖ス、

特別第五、 複雜ノ語ニ於テハ、最后ノ語ノミ持格符號ヲ附ス、*"My father-in-law's house"*

*"The bard of Lomond's lay"; "Henry the Eighth's reign"*ノ如ク、

解剖ニ於テ複雜名詞チ一個ノ名詞ト見做ス、

特別第六、 持格ニ在ル名詞若クハ代名詞ハ「ゼラント」ニ係屬スルヲ得、左例ノ如シ、

*This will be the effect of the pupil's composing frequently. This will be the effect of his composing frequently*

第一、 名詞ノ性ヲ有スル「ゼラント」ハ此ノ如ク屬性ノ關係ヲ有スル持格名詞若クハ持格代名詞ヲ取リナガラ元來ノ働詞ノ性質ニ從ヒテ補足若クハ繫屬語ヲ附屬スルヲ得ベシ、是ヲ以テ左例ノ如キ構文ヲ生ズ、

(一) *Disease and death were consequence of the man's neglecting treatment.*

茲ニ *neglecting* ナル「ゼラント」ヲ作りタル働詞 *neglect* ハ補足ヲ要スベキ性ナルガ故ニ *treatment* チ加ヘタルナリ、

(二) *This is the result of his being diligent in his youth.*

茲ニ *being* ナル「ゼラント」ヲ作りタル *be* ナル働詞ハ不完成講説ノ働詞ナルヲ以テ、繫屬語ヲ附加シタリ、

此等ノ構造ハ少シモ不合理ノ点ナクシテ、「ゼラント」ノ性質ヨリシテ此結果ヲ生ズルハ自然ノ勢ナリトス、

第二、 斯クノ理ナルヲ以テ、屬性關係ヲ有スベキ名詞、若クハ代名詞ガ持格ノ式様ヲ有セザレバ、忽チ本則ヲ破壊スベシ、例之ヘバ *There is no doubt of the bill passing the House* ナル構文ハ本則ニ違ヘル者ナレバ、之ヲ改メテ *There is no doubt of the bill's passing the House* トナスベシ、

### 第三項 同格

規則第五、 他ノ名詞若クハ代名詞ヲ説明スル爲ニ用井ラレタル名詞若クハ代名詞ハ同格ニ置カル可シ、左例ノ如シ、

(一) *Thomson, the poet, was a contemporary of Hume, the historian.*

〔詩人「トムソン」ハ史家「ヘーム」ト同時ノ人ナリキ〕

(二) *'Tis I, Hamlet the Dane.*

〔我レハ丁抹人「ハムレット」ナリ〕

第一、 主項ノハ格文句中ニ成立スル文法的關係ニ係ハル者ニシテ、同格名詞ノ格ヲ知ルニ先チ、文詞論一定ノ規則ヲ以テ之ヲ決定セザル可カラズ、

第二、熟語若シハ命題モ名詞ト同格ニ在ルヲ得ベシ、其例左ノ如シ、

(一) O let us still the secret joy partake. To follow virtue 'en for virtue's sake.

[To follow.....ハ JOYト同格ナリ]

(二) In the serene expression of her face he read divine BEATITUDE,

"Blessed are the pure in heart."

[Blessed are.....ハ BEATITUDEト同格ナリ]

### 練習第三十四

次ノ文句ニ於テ規則第五ヲ應用セヨ

第一、'Tis I, Hamlet the Dane.

[余ハ丁抹入「ハムレット」ナリ]

第二、At midnight, in the forest shades, Bozzaris ranged his Suliote band, True as the steel of their tried blades, Heroes in heart and hand.

[「中夜森林ニ於テ」ハ「ボザリス」ハ「英雄」ノ兵隊ヲ排列セリ、其兵ハ「試」ハ「精練」シタル「英雄」者ニシテ、其剛膽ト其武勇ハ「宛然」ト「武器」ノ堅キカ如シ]

第三、This is my son, mine own Telemachus.

[此ハ「我ガ子」ハ「テレマコス」ナリ]

第四、There, swinging wide at her moorings, lay the Somerset British man-of-war—— A phantom, ship.

[「鏡列艦軍艦」ハ「ソマセット」ハ「艦ヲ以テ埠頭ニ掛動セリ」此艦ハ「試」ハ「精練」ナリ「ソマセット」]

第五、So work the honey-bees, Creatures that by a rule in nature teach The art of order to a peopled kingdom.

[「自然ノ規則」ハ「ヨリ」人界ニ次序整列ノ術ヲ教ユル動物ナル「蜜蜂」ハ「事ヲナヌアリ」]

第六、That best portion of a good man's life—— His little, nameless, unremembered acts Of kindness and of love.

[「善人ノ生命」ハ「最良ナル者」ハ「懇切ト親愛ノ細小無名」ニ「記憶」ナラズ「ザル」行爲ナリ]

第七、It is seldom that the father and the son, he who has borne the weight, and he who been brought up in the lustre of the diadem, exhibit equal capacity for the administration of affairs.

[「重任」ヲ擔フ「父ト」榮華ニ生長シタル子ト、事務ヲ掌理スルノ才能相等シキ「殆」ト「未ダ」見ザル所ナリ]

特別式樣及俗話式樣之註

第一、 Each Other, They loved each other 又ハ They hated one another  
 ナル文句ニ在テ、 each 及オ other ノ二語、及オ one 及オ another ノ二語ハ、相互ノ  
 關係ヲ有スレドモ、其構造ハ相異ナリ、何トナレハ They loved each other ハ  
 They loved, each [loved] other [彼等各人ハ他人ヲ愛セリ] ナ短縮シタル者ニシ  
 テ、 They hated one another ハ They hated one [hated] another [彼等ノ各一  
 人ハ殘ル一人ヲ愛セリ] ナ短縮シタル者ナレハ、 each ハ they ト同格ニシテ、即ハ主  
 格ニアリテ、 other ハ loved ナル働詞ニ支配セラレテ、目的格ニアリ、又オ one ハ  
 they ト同格ニシテ主格ニ在レドモ another ハ hated ナル働詞ノ目的ナレハ、目的格  
 ニ在ルナリ、

此ノ構造ハ談話ヲ簡約ニスル法ヲ實行シタル例ニシテ、同理ニ基キテ They heard  
 each other's voice ナル文句ヲ説明スルヲ得ベシ、即チ此文句ハ They heard, each  
 (heard) other's voice [彼等各人ハ他ノ人ノ聲ヲ聞ケリ]ノ省略ナリトス、

第二、 as ナテ同格トナル者、 as ナル語ノ方便ヲ借テ附屬名詞ヲ誘導シ、以テ同格  
 トナル者アリ、左例ノ如シ、

Cicero as an orator was bold—as a soldier, he was timid.

此文句ハ左ノ如ク言フト同一ナリ、

Cicero, considered as an orator was bold—considered as a soldier, he  
 was timid.

此ノ類ノ構造ハ常ニ省略セラレタル者ニシテ、解剖ニ在テハ省略セラレタル語ヲ補フカ、  
 若シハ同格名詞ハ as ニテ誘導セラレ、構造法ハ俗話的ナリト言フベシ、

第三、 代名詞ニ係ル同格、 同格ニ付テ或ハシキ場合アリ、次文ノ構造ニテ之ヲ解明  
 セン、

Thus shall mankind his Gubian care engage, The promised father  
 of the future age.

[人ハ未來ノ父タルベキ後見ノ注意ヲ用ヒスシ]

father ナル名詞ハ his ニ係レン故ニ、之レト同格ニシテ持格ナリトスルハ、通例ノ法ナレ  
 ドモ、 his ハ of him ト同價ナル故ニ、 father ハ him ト同格ニシテ、目的格ニ在リト  
 スル方可ナリ、(即ハチ the Gubian care of him, the father of the future  
 age ナリ)、

前ニ as ニテ誘導シタル同格名詞ニ付テ言ヒタルト同一様ノ説明ガ次ノ構造ニモ適スベ  
 シ、即ハチ The general's popularity as a commander increases daily ハ The

popularity of the general as a commander increases daily ト同様ニシテ、  
general 名 commander 共ニ目的格ナリトス、

第四、形容詞狀ニ用ヒタル代名詞、同格名詞ノ主項ニ用ヒタル代名詞ハ形容詞ノ如ク用ヒタル代名詞ト差別セザル可カラズ、同格ノ主項ニ用ヒタル代名詞ハ次ノ如キ構造ヲ以テ解明セラレ、

But he, our gracious Master, kind as just, Knowing our frame, remembers we are dust.

此レ正シク同格ノ規則ニ入ルニキ者ニシテ、次例ニ在ル者ト同ジカラズ、

(一) And you, ye waters, roll.

(二) The poets in our youth begin in gladness.

此二例ニ於テ見ル如キ構造ハ同格ノ場合トシテ論ズルニ通例トスレドモ、名詞ヲ形容詞狀ニ用ヒ得ル如ク、此代名詞ヲ形容詞狀ニ用ヒラレタル者ト見做スヲ以テ優レリトス、第五、命題ニ關スル同格、完全ナル文句ニテ表示シタル事ヲ、名詞ノ方便ニ依テ再説スルコトアリ、例ハズ He rashly ventured to ascend the mountain without a guide, an act which cost him his life (彼ハ導者ヲ伴ハズシテ大膽ニ山ヲ登レリ、其事業ハ彼ノ生命ニモ匹敵スル程困難ナル者ナリシ)ノ如キ是ニシテ、his rashly venturing to ascend the mountain without a guide was an act which

cost him his life ト同一意ナリ、

### 第四、補足關係

#### 第一項 他働詞之補足

規則第六、他働詞ノ目的ハ目的格ニ在リ、

第一、他働詞ノ目的即ハチ補足(通例之ヲ直接目的 direct object ト稱ス)ハ次ニ掲グルガ如シ、

其一、名詞、Love your enemies ノ如シ、

其二、代名詞、Follow me ノ如シ、

其三、不定辭若シハ熟語、次例ノ如シ、

(一) Learn to labor and to write (目的ニ用ヒラレタル單純ノ不定辭)

(二) Now leave complaining, and begin your tea (目的ニ用ヒラレタル「ゼラント」)

(三) Ladies, you deserve to have a temple built you (目的ニ用ヒラレタル不定熟語)

其四、命題、I perceived that we brought goodhumor with us ノ如シ、

注、 働詞ノ目的ニ用ヒタル熟語若クハ客句ハ單數ニシテ目的格ニ在リトシテ解剖ス、少シノ俗話式様ヲ除クノ外、規則第六ハ只ダ發働語法ノ他働詞ニノミ適合スルヲ了解セザル可カラズ、

第二、 働詞狀語、目的ハ只ダ定働詞ノ補足タルヲ得ルノミナラズ、亦タ其働詞、狀語即ハチ不定辭及分辭ノ補足タルヲ得ベシ、其例次ノ如シ、

(一) TO PUT on your harness is different from PUTTING it off.

〔發ニ To. PUT ハ發着ノ不定辭、PUTTING ハ其「ヤラシム」ニ「ミナテ、harness 及 it」ハ補足ナリ〕

(二) The thief, SEEING the officer, ran away. HAVING EXPLORED the islands, Columbus returned to Spain.

〔發ニ SEEING 及 HAVING EXPLORED ハ共ニ分詞ニシテ、officer 及 islands ハ其補足ナリ〕

第三、 排列法、 目的ガ働詞ノ次ニ來ルヲ以テ整正ノ順序トス、次例ノ如シ

And each separate dying ember Wrought its ghost upon the floor,

然レドモ修辭學上語氣ニ趣味ヲ附センガ爲ニ、目的ガ働詞ノ前ニ來モ可ナリ、其例左ノ如シ、

Honey from out the gnarled hive I'll bring, And zipples wain with sweatness gather thee.

注、 斯ク目的ヲ働詞ノ前ニ轉置スルガ爲メニ時々疑惑ノ生スルヲアリテ、就中詩歌ニ在テハ殊ニ然リトス、左ニ掲ゲル世人ガ善ク知レル「グレイ」氏ノ輓歌ノ句ヲ見ヨ、  
And all the air a solemn stillness holds.

此句ニ於テハ stillness ナ目的トシテ the air holds the stillness ト解スベキヤ、將々 air ナ目的トシテ the stillness holds the air ト解スベキヤハ、單ニ構文上ヨリ決定シ難シ然レドモ其意義ヲ考フルキハ、stillness ガ目的ナルヲ推知スル可シ、

### 練習第三十六

次ノ文句ニ於テ規則第六ヲ應用セヨ、

第一、 The Muses haunt clear spring, or shady grove, or sunny hill;

〔女神「ミース」ハ麗春ヤ、陰林ヤ、或ハ日光ヲ受ケル邱山ニ往來ス〕

第二、 Not a soldier discharged his farewell shot-

〔兵卒ハ一人モ離別ノ銃砲ヲ放タザリシ〕

第三、 When the enamoured sunny light Brightens her that was so bright.

〔時ニ愛スベキ日光ハ其快美ナル女ヲ照ス〕

第四、 Their furrow oft the stubborn glebe has broke.

〔堅キ土泥ハ厩田畝ヲ替ケリ〕

第五、 Beaux banish beaux, and coaches coaches drive.

〔治郎ハ治郎ヲ逐キ、馬車ハ馬車ヲ驅ス〕

第六、 The gushing flood the tartans dyed.

〔湧沸スル洪水ハ小船ヲ浸セリ〕

第七、 Me he restored, and him he hanged.

〔彼ハ余ノ病ヲ回復シ、又々自カラ殺死セリ〕

第八、 Knowledge in general expands the mind, exalts the faculties, refines the taste of pleasure, and opens innumerable sources of intellectual enjoyment.

〔智識ハ一般ニ心志ヲ展開シ、才能ヲ高給ニシ、快樂ノ源泉ヲ清新ニシ、智力上福利ノ源流ヲ開ク〕

第九、 For my own part I have ever believed, and do know, that there are witches.

〔他人ハ知ラス、余ハ獨リ巫女ノ有ルコトヲ信テ信シ、今尙之ヲ信シテ疑ハス〕

第十、 They lost no more time in asking questions.

〔彼等ハ疑問ヲ質スル時ニ是キ時ヲ消費セザリシナリ〕

第十一、 They follow an adventurer whom they fear, and obey a power which they hate; we serve a monarch whom we love—a God whom we adore.

〔彼等ハ自己ニ恐怖ノ危行者ニ従ヒ、自己ニ惡ムム勢力ニ服ス、吾人ハ然ラス、只吾人ノ愛スル帝王ニ服務スルノ

ミ、何ヤ、曰ン、即チ吾人ハ尊重スル自然之理ナリ〕

第十二、 Let melive a life of faith, Let me die thy people's death.

〔吾人生キテハ信ヲ盡ンシ、死シテハ天帝ノ道ニ従ラシムル〕

第十三、 He gathered new and greater armies from his own land—from subjugated lands. He called forth the young and brave—one from every household—from the Pyrenees to the Zuyder Zee—from Jura to the ocean. He marshalled them into long and majestic columns, and wenth forth to seize that universal dominion which seemed almost within his grasp.

〔彼ハ其領地ナル屬國ヨリ新タニ大軍ヲ募リ、南ハ「ピリニース」山ニ至リ、北ハ「サイター、シー」海ニ至リ、東ハ「シニラー」ヨリ西ハ大西洋ニ至ルマデ、戸毎ニ勇猛ノ壯年ヲ出サシメ、堂々タル長軍ヲ整ヘテ、以テ殆ド掌中ニ入りタル宇内ヲ併呑セントシテ出陣セリ〕

### 規則第六之應用文詞論

規則第六之破壊、

第一、 名詞ニ關シテ、規則第六ノ破壊アルベカラズ、何トナレバ名詞ハ目的格ニ在テ一モ語尾變化ヲ有セザレバナリ、

第二、代名詞ニテ成ル目的ガ働詞ノ後ニ直接シテ來ル時ハ、本則ノ破壊甚ダ稀ナリ、然レドモ構文ガ前後轉倒シタル場合カ、若シハ省畧シタル場合ニ在テハ、間誤謬ニ陥ルイアリ左例ノ如シ、

(一) They that honor me I will honor.

錯誤、They ン will honor ナル働詞ノ目的ナリ、故ニ之ヲ目的格ニ改メ、Them that honor me I will honor トセザル可カラズ、

(二) Let the able-bodied fight, add they that are feeble do guard duty at home.

錯誤、they ン let ナル省畧シタル働詞ノ目的ヲラシメント欲セル者ナレハ之ヲthem 若シハ those ニ改メザル可カラズ、是ヲ以テ左ノ要件アリ、

豫戒、代名詞ニテ成ル目的ノ位置ガ、之ヲ支配スル働詞ニ距タル時ハ、此代名詞ヲ目的格ノ式様ナラシムルニ注意ス可シ、

規則第六ニ屬スル特別、

特別第一、ALLOW, BRING, BUY 等ノ如キ他働詞ハ、二個ノ目的即ハチ直接目的及間接目的ヲ伴有スルヲ得、次例ノ如シ

(一) Send us [間接目的] a message [直接目的].

(二) Tell him [間接目的] to write [直接目的].

第一、斯ノ如キ構造ヲ爲スニキ働詞ノ主要ナル者左ノ如シ、

allow	get	pay	send
bring	give	play	show
buy	leave	pour	sing
carry	lend	present	tell
cost	make	promise	throw
deny	offer	provide	write
do	order	refuse	
draw	pass	sell	

第二、間接目的ハ常ニ直接目的ノ前ニ在ル者ニシテ、之ヲ解剖スルニハ、目的格ノ名詞ニシテ、働詞ノ間接目的ナリト言フベシ、

特別第二、ALLOW, BRING, BUY 等ノ受働詞ハ時ヲシテ直接目的ヲ取ルイアリ、其例左ノ如シ、

(一) We were promised an office.

(二) He was refused support.

注、受働語法ノ働詞ハ概々チ主格名詞ノ補足ヲ要ス、(規則第七ヲ見ヨ)、而シテ某ノ受働詞ノ後ニ在ル目的ノ特異ナル用法アルガ爲ニ、特別第二ヲ豫定スベキトナレリ、先キ



特別第一ノ下ニ擧ケタル働詞ハ、發働語法ニ在ルトキ間接目的ト直接目的ノ兩方ヲ取レドモ、受働語法ニ在ルトキハ、直接目的ヲ働詞ノ主ニ變テ、目的格名詞ノ補足ヲ維持ス、其説明ハ本論ニ係ル俗話式様ヲ見ルニシ、

特別第三、 MAKE, CREATE, ELECT, APPOINT, NAME, CALL 等ノ意義ヲ有スル働詞ハ皆ナニ重ノ目ヲ的取ル、一ハ直接目的ニシテ、一ハ目的格ニ在ル屬性格補足ナリ、其例左ノ如シ、

(一) The people elected Washington president.

[Washington ハ直接目的ニシテ、President ハ屬性的目的ナリ]

(二) His parents named him John

[him ハ直接目的ニシテ、John ハ屬性的目的ナリ]

(三) They made Rollo captain.

[Rollo ハ直接目的ニシテ、captain ハ屬性的目的ナリ]

第一、右ノ構造ニ在テ made, named, elected 等ノ目的ハ即ハ直接目的ナリ、而シテ President, John, captain 等ノ之ヲ使令目的 *facilitive object* ト名クルコアリ、然レドモ寧ロ之ヲ屬性的目的若クハ屬性の補足ト名クルチ可トス、但シ直接目的ハ常ニ屬性的目的ニ先ノスル者トス、

注、屬性的目的チ同格名詞ナリトシ、此構造チ同格ノ一例ト見做スコ展アレドモ、正

シカラズ、屬性的目的ハ働詞ニ對シ一種異様ノ關係ヲ有スル者ニシテ、其意味ニ付テ言ヘバ、必竟直接目的ニ向テスル屬性の補足ニ變形サレタル働詞ノ動作ナルノミ、例ヘバ前例ニ在テノ屬性の補足ハ一ハ Rollo ナル人チ captain ヲラシメテ爲メノ動作、一ハ彼人チシテ John ト名ケン爲メノ動作、一ハ Washington チ president ヲラシメテ爲メノ動作ナリトス、

第二、屬性の補足ハ不定辭ナルコアリ、例之ハ、They made him (to) labor ノ如シ、

第三、受働ノ構造ニ於テハ、直接目的ハ主トナリ、屬性的目的ハ講説主格ニ變ゼラル

(規則第七ヲ見ヨ)、

特別第四、他働詞ノ中ニハ其目的ヲ變形セン爲メニ、形容詞補足ヲ取ル者アリ、次例ノ

如シ

(一) Virtue renders life happy.

(二) This struck me dumb.

注、右第一例ニ在ル happy ノ如キ形容ハ詞全ク補足ニ用サラルコチ知ラズシテ、單ニ之ヲ主ノ變形語(名詞等ヲ變形スル語)ト見做スチ常トス、斯ノ如キ淺見チナスニ於テハ We call the man rich [吾人ハ其人チ富メリト云フ]ト We call the rich man [吾人ハ富人チ呼ブ]トノ一文チ分拆シテ之レガ區別ヲ立ツコ能ハサル可シ、  
特別第五、不定辭若クハ一ゼラント「若クハ分詞ハ形容詞ヲ補足ニ取ルコチ得ベシ、其例

左ノ如シ、

- (一) To be virtuous is to be happy.
- (二) He deceived people by seeming poor.
- (三) Feeling cold, he put on his coat.

特別式樣及俗話式樣之注

第一、 Ask 及 Teach. 此ノ二個ノ働詞ハ何レモ二個ノ補足ヲ取り、其補足ハ兩ツナガラ直接目的ナリ、然レドモ特別第一ニ示シタル働詞ニ用エル補足ト性質ヲ異ニス、即ハチ前ニ示シタル allow, bring, buy 等ノ働詞ハ直接目的ト間接目的トヲ補足ニ取レリ、然ルニ

The teacher asked John a question.

又ハ

Murray taught the boy grammar. ノ如キ文句ニ於テ、 John ト question 及ビ boy ト grammar ハ何レモ重複目的格補足ヲナシ、共ニ直接目的ニシテ、恰モ *ask* 及 *teach* ハ同時ニ二個相異ノ意味ヲ表スルガ如シ、蓋シ拉丁語ニテハ此二個ノ働詞ハ二個ノ目的格 accusative case ナ支配ス、

受働構造ヲ用エル時ニ、疑問ヲ受ケ或ハ教授ヲ受クル事物ノ名ハ目的格ニアリテ、働詞ノ直接目的ナリトス、 John was asked a question 又ハ The boy was taught grammar ノ如シ、

(拉丁語ニテハ此ノ目的ハ目的格式樣ヲ有ス)、但シ此レハ俗話的構法ニシテ、目的格名詞ヲ支配スル力ヲ有スル受働詞ノ別例トセザルベカラズ、  
第二、 受働詞ニ次グ目的格、 特別第二ニ論シタル働詞ノ受働式樣ノ後ニ目的格補足ヲ使用スルハ、 ask 及 teach ナル働詞ノ論ヲ引テ之ヲ解明スルヲ得、今先ツ次ノ例ヲ取ル、

- (一) The conqueror offered them [間接田的] their lives [直接田的]
- (二) The porter refused them [間接田的] admittance [直接田的]

倍テ此二文句ヲ受働構法ニ變シテ次ノ如クス、

- (一) Their lives were offered them [間接田的] by the conqueror.
- (二) Admittance was refused them [間接田的] by the porter.

今右ノ二文句ニ在テ少シモ常ニ異ナル点ナシ、何トナレハ them ハ兩例ニ於テ目的格 (dative) ニシテ、何レノ受働詞モ次ニ之ヲ有シ得ル者ナレハナリ、然ルニ又々之ヲ次文ノ如ク變ゼン、

- (一) They were offered their lives [直接田的] by the conqueror.

(11) They were refused admittance [直接目的] by the.....porter.  
 ask 及 teach ナル 働詞ノ受働式様ノ次ニ直接目的ヲ使用スルハ、其例少ナケレドモ、規則  
 的構法ナリ、然レドモ爰ニ言フガ如キ働詞ノ次ニ直接目的ヲ使用スルハ、不規則俗話的ノ  
 構法ニシテ、國語ノ通法ニ反スル者トス、  
 蓋シ此ノ構法ハ構法擴張之法則(又之ヲ構法混亂之法則ト云フ)ナリ(カ)ヲ用ユルヨリ起リタ  
 ル者ナルベクシテ、詳言スレバ ask 及 teach ノ構法ヲ以テ異性ヲ有スル働詞ニ汎用シタ  
 ル者ナリ、例スルニ、吾人ノ常ニ He was taught grammar (He ハ正ニテ受働詞ノ主  
 ナリ、何トナレバ之ヲ轉シ發働詞ノ直接目的トナシ、 any body taught him gram-  
 mar ト云フ)ヲ得レバナリ)ト云フヲ得ルコアルヨリ、知ラズ識ラズ異性ノ働詞ニモ同法  
 ヲ汎用シ、間接目的タルベキ者ヲ主位ニ置キテ They were refused admittance ト云フ  
 ガ如キ誤謬ノ慣例ヲ生ジタルナリ、

第二項 自働詞及受働詞之補足

規則第七、 自働詞若クハ受働詞ノ補足ニ用サレタル名詞若クハ代名詞ハ主格ニ在リ、  
 其例左ノ如シ、

- 第一、 I am he; Washington became president; Napoleon was elected emperor.  
 自働詞若クハ受働詞ノ補足ニ用サレタル名詞若クハ代名詞ハ主格ニ在リ、

第二、 規則第七ノ不完成講説ヲナス僅々ノ自働詞ニノミ適用ス、何トナレバ自働詞ハ  
 大抵補足ヲ取ラザレバナリ、不完成講説ヲナス自働詞ノ主タル者ハ Be, become,  
 appear, seem, stand, walk (及其他位置、運動、若クハ境遇ヲ示メス働詞)、及ビ  
 make, create, elect, appoint, name, call 等ノ働詞ノ受働式様ヲ有スル者ナリ、

練習第三十八、

次ノ文句ニ規則第七ヲ應用セヨ、

- 第一、 Tell me not in mournful numbers Life is but an empty dream.  
 [塵々憂ヒテ生命ハ夢ノ如シト云フノ勿レ]
- 第二、 The grave is not its goal.  
 [墓所ハ其目的ニマラス]
- 第三、 It is I——be not afraid.  
 [是レ我ナリ、恐ルノナカレ]
- 第四、 Breathes there a man with soul so dead, Who never to himself  
 hath said, This is my own, my native land?  
 [竊ニ去リ、此レハ我ガ故郷ナリト決メ言ハザル人ガ、其處ニ生ルヤ]

第五、 The proper study of mankind is man.

〔人類ノ適當ナル學問ハ人ナリ〕

第六、 And the earth was all rest, and the air was all love.

〔大地ハ皆休所ナリ、空氣ハ皆愛ナリ〕

第七、 The better part of valor is discretion.

〔小心賢々ハ勇ノ端ナリ〕

第八、 The other shape—— If shape it might be called that shape had

none Distinguishable in member, joint, or limb; Or substance might be

called that shadow seem'd, For each seem'd either:——black it stood as

night.

〔四体、關節、手足ヲ分別スルニキ形容ナキ者ニシテ尙ホ其影像ガ夜間人目ニ現映スル者ヲサヘ、形体ト名クベクンハ、是レ必ズ他ノ形体ナラン、是レ靈ナリ〕

### 規則第七之應用文詞論

規則第七ニ屬スル特別

特別第一、 自働詞若クハ受働詞ノ不定辭及分辭ハ、名詞若クハ代名詞ヲ補足ニ取り得、其

名詞若クハ代名詞ハ其前ニ在ル名詞若クハ代名詞ヲ説明シ、又之ト同格ニアル者ナリト  
ス、

(一) It was thought to be he He ン to be ノ補足ニ用ヒラレ、主格ニ在リ、  
何トナレバ It ガ主格ニ在レバナリ、 Scholar ン to be ノ補足ニシテ、目的

(二) I believed him to be a scholar. 格ナリ、何トナレバ him ン believed ノ目的ニテ目的格ニアレバナリ、

(三) I cannot help being an admirer of beauty. Admirer ン I ヲ説明シ  
タル故ニ主格ニアリ、

特別第二、 自働詞若クハ受働詞ハ主ヲ變形スル講說形容詞ヲ補足ニ取ルヲ得、其例左  
ノ如シ、

The fields are green [講說形容詞ノ補足] The nation become powerful [同上]

Some men are called happy [同上]

規則第七之破壞

其一、 who ナル代名詞ヲ使用スル場合、

補足ハ働詞ノ後ニ置クヲ當然トスレドモ、代名詞 who ヲ補足トスル時、之ヲ働詞ノ前ニ  
置ク、I know who you are (余ハ汝ガ誰ナルヤヲ知ル、汝ハ「シヨン」ナルヲ知ル)ノ

如シ、斯ク特別ノ位置ニ代名詞ヲ使用スルヨリシテ、規則第七ヲ破リ易キヲ甚ダ大ナリ、次例ノ如シ、

Whom do men say that I am?

此文ノ誤ヲ知ルニハ、whom ナル疑問代名詞ニ答フベキ他ノ代名詞ヲ代置詞スレバ次ノ如シ、

Do men say that I am he?

此構造ニテハ講説主格ヲ要スルコト明ナリ、故ニ前ノ whom ナル Who ニ改メザル可カラズ、是ヲ以テ左ノ要件アリ、

豫戒第一、關係代名詞及疑問代名詞ノ Who ナル講説主格ニ使用スル時、此代名詞ハ主格ノ式様ニアルベキ様ニ注意セザル可カラズ、

其二、自働詞ノ働詞狀語ト代名詞補足トヲ並用スル場合、其例左ノ如シ、

Who do you suppose io be?

錯誤、who ハヒト同事物ヲ示ス者ニシテ、to be ノ補足ヲラシメントシタルニ、ヒト suppose ノ目的ニシテ、目的格ニ在レバ、who ナル whom ニ改タメ、ヒト同格ナラシメザル可カラズ、

It being her, there was nothing more to be said.

錯誤、being ナル分詞ハ主格ノヒト前ニ有シ、其補足ハヒト同事物ヲ指セル故ニ、her ナ

she トセザル可カラズ、是ヲ以テ左ノ要件アリ、  
豫戒第二、代名詞ヲ補足ニ使用スルニ當リ、自働詞ノ働詞狀語ハ先ツアル名詞若クハ代名詞ト其格ヲ同一ニセザル可カラズ、

### 第五、副詞關係

規則第八、副詞ハ働詞若クハ形容詞若クハ他ノ副詞ヲ變形ス、

第一、yes 及 no ナル應答副詞ハ獨立シテ使用セラル、Is he at home? Yes

(—He is at home)ノ如シ、

第二、作法副詞ハ屢々全命題ヲ變形スルニ用ヒラル、其例左ノ如シ、

Truly, the world does move.

### 練習第四十、

次ノ文句ニ規則第八ヲ應用セヨ、

第一、The very finest flowers usually wither the most quickly.

[甚ク美麗ナル花ハ常ニ尤速ニ凋枯ス]

第二、Slowly and sadly we laid him down.

[吾人ハ徐ロニ且ツ哀シク彼ヲ臥シメタリ]

第三、 And now a bubble bursts, and now a world.

〔今ハ泡沫湧沸シ、而シテ今ハ世界〕

第四、 For them no more the blazing hearth shall burn.

〔燃ユル火モ彼等ノ爲メニ強ク燃ヘキナラン〕

第五、 III blows the wind that profits nobody.

〔誰人ニモ無益ナキ風ハ惡ク吹ク〕

第六、 Freely we serve because we freely love.

〔吾人ハ自由ニ愛スル故ニ、自由ニ服事ス〕

第七、 When here, but three days since I came, Bewildered in purpuit of game,

All seemed as peaceful and as still As the mist slundering on you hill.

〔三日前余ノ眼ヲ迷ヒ迷フヲ茲ニ來リシ時、眼前ノ各物ハ皆ナ汝小丘上ニ縋リ霧ノ如ク、幽靜閑寂ニ見ヘタリ〕

### 規則第八之應用文詞論

規則第八ニ屬スル特別

特別第一、 副詞ハ文句ヲシテ最モ明瞭ニシテ最モ爽快ナラシムベキ位地ニ置カザルベカラズ

ラズ

副詞ハ大概形容詞ノ前、單純式様ノ副詞ノ後複合式様ノ第一助詞ノ後ニ置ク者トス、此レ甚ダ廣キ原則(此原則ハ副詞、狀熟語ニモ單純複詞ニモ適用ス)ナレドモ、又々之レニ違フ者多シ、

注副詞ヲ適當ノ地ニ置クハ、趣味ヲ雅美ニシ、定斷ヲ明晰ニスルノ主意ニシテ、其術ヲ尤モ善ク知ルハ、吾ニ規則特例等ヲ學ンデ得ベカラズシテ、種々ノ實例ヲ玩味シテ得ラルベキ者トス、

(一) We cannot deprive them of merit wholly.

茲ニ wholly ナル副詞ノ位置宜シキヲ失ヘリ、何トナレバ本ト deprive ナル副詞ニ關係セシメント欲セシ者ナルニ、副詞ト副詞トノ間ニ them of merit ナル挿語アリテ意義甚ダニ混亂セリ、故ニ之ヲ次ノ如ク改ムベシ、

We cannot wholly deprive them of merit.

〔吾人ハ彼等ノ功績ヲ全ク奪フ能ハズ〕

(二) I hope not much to tire those I shall not happen to please; — Doctor Johnson  
ソノ文句ナリ、

此文ニテハ「余ガ満足セシメ難キ人等ヲ憊勞セシムルヲ多ク望マズ」ト云フ意アリ、然レドモ博士「ジョンソン」氏ノ作意ハ「余ハ満足セシメ難キ人等ヲ多ク疲ラスヲ望マズ」ト

云フニアラン、然ラハ之ヲ左ノ如ク改ムベシ、

I hope I shall not much tire those whom I shall [又ハ may] not happen to please.

(III) This mode of expression rather suits familiar than grave style.——Murray's Grammar  
ニ在ル文句ナリ、

此文句モ次ノ如ク改ムベシ更ニ佳ナリ、

This mode of expression suits [a familiar rather than [a] grave style.

[此ノ言辭法ハ嚴格ノ語法ヨリモ略ロ親密ノ語法ニ適ス]

(四) A master-mind was equally wanting in the cabinet and in the field.

此文句ニ於テ equally チ wanting ノ次ニ置カサル可カラズ、該例ハ恰モ前第二例ニ於ケルガ如ク其關係混亂シタリ、蓋シ equally ハ wanting ナル語ヲ變形シタルニハ相違ナケレドモ、亦々 in the cabinet and in the field ナル熟語ニモ關係セリ、此場合ニ在テハ副詞ノ關係ヲ有スルニ語若シハ一言辭ノ間ニ置カルベシナル原則ニ從フベシ、

(五) I have been disappointed greatly at your conduct.

此文句ノ greatly ナル副詞ノ位地正シカラズシテ、I have been greatly disappointed at your conduct ト改ムベシ、此場合ニ於ケル原則ニ曰ク、複合時ニ在テハ副詞ノ助働詞及分詞ノ間ニ挿入セラヌベシ、

(六) He used to often come. I wished to really know.

此副詞ノ位置モ宜シカラズ、單純不定辭ニ在テハ、副詞ガ働詞トナル符号トチ分割スルベカラズシテ、此二者ニ先ンズルカ若シハ後レザル可カラズ、故ニ之ヲ左ノ如ク改ムベシ、

He used often to come. 又ハ He used to come often. I wished really to know. 又ハ

ハ I wished to know really.

複合不定辭ニ於テモ複合時ニ於ケルト同規則ヲ適用スベシ、故ニ次ノ如ク言フコトヲ得、  
It is believed to have often happened. He is thought to be well informed on that subject.

ONLY. 英語副詞中最モ煩ハシキ者ハ only ニシテ、此語ヲ文句中ニ使用スルニ當タリ、大ニ相異ナル數多ノ意義ヲ生ズ、

(一) Only he mourned for his brother.

此文句ノ only ハ but ト同様ノ意ヲ示セルニシテ、「彼ハ常ニ薄情ナル男ナレドモ、併シ其平素ノ性質ニモ似ズ、其兄弟ニ向テノミ哀シタリ」ト云フ意ナリ、

(二) He only mourned for his brother.

此文ニテ only ハ alone ノ意ヲ有シ、「彼レノミ其兄弟ヲ哀シタレド、他ノ人ハ其兄弟ヲ哀マザリシ」ト云フ義ナリ、

(三) He only-mourned for his brother.

此文ニテハ「彼ハ其兄弟ヲ哀ムノミニテ、少シモ他ノ行爲ナカリキ」ト云フ義ナリ、

(四) He mourned *only* for his brother.

此文ニテハ、「彼ハ徒ニ其兄弟ヲ哀ムノミニシテ、一モ他ノ原因ノアルニアラズ」ト云フ義ナリ、

(五) He mourned for his *only* brother.

此文ニテハ「彼ハ只一人ノ兄弟ヲ哀メリ」ト云フ意義ニテ、*only*ハ一ノ形容詞ナリ、

(六) He mourned for his brother *only*.

此文ニテハ「彼ハ只其兄弟ノミヲ哀シム、一モ他ノ人ヲ哀マズ」ト云フ意ニシテ、*only*ハ *alone*ノ義ナリ、

次ニ掲グルハ此副詞ノ位地ヲ誤イルノ例ナリ、

甲、 A term which *only* implies the idea of persons.

茲ニ *only*ノカハ *implies* ナル語ニ係ルニ非ラズシテ、*persons* ナル語ニ係ラシメント欲スルニマレン、之ヲ A term which implies the idea of persons *only*ト改メザルニカラス、

乙、 I can *only* regard them as Scotchisms.

茲ニ *only*ノカハ *regard* ナル動詞ニ係ルニマラズシテ、*Scotchisms* ナル名詞ニ係ラシメント欲スル者ナレン、之ヲ I can regard them *only* as Scotchismsト改メザルニカラス、

丙、 When the article stands *only* before the first of two or more connected nouns.

此文モ左ノ如ク改メザルニカラス、

When the article stands *only* before the first of two or more connected nouns.

特別第二

副詞ノ講説形容詞ノ代リニ誤用スルニカラス、左例ノ如シ

(一) The rose smells *sweet*——*sweetly* ニアラズ、

(二) Gutturals sound *harsh*——*harshly* ニアラズ、

(三) Mary looks *cold*——*coldly* ニアラズ、

Mary looks cold(「メリー」ハ外貌ニ於テ寒クアルト云フ義)ト言ヒテ誤ナキ所以ハ、見ル有様ヲ示サント欲スルニアラズシテ、「メリー」ノ性質ヲ示サント欲シテ言ヒタル者ナレバナリ、今若シ前置詞ヲ附加シ、自働詞ヲ他働詞ニ變ジテ、Mary looks on John *coldly*ト言フコト得、何トナレバ茲ニ「メリー」ガ「シヨ」ヲ見ル有様ヲ示サント欲シテ言ヒタル者ニシテ、其性質ヲ示サント欲セシニアラザレバナリ、

特別第三

二個ノ否拒辭ハ決シテ否拒ヲ表示スルニ用ユルコト能ハズ、

(一) I have *not* done *nothing*.

此文ニハ否拒辭二個アルヲ以テ、某事物ヲ爲シタルコト言ヘリ、若シ何ノ事物ヲモ爲サザルコト言ハント欲セバ I have done *nothing* 若シハ I have not done *anything*ト言ハザル可カラズ、



(一) He has eaten no bread nor drunk no water these two days.  
此文句ニ於テ nor [not or 二同シ] + water ノ前ノ no トノ二語ハ重複否拒ヲ作シテ  
リ、宜シク之ヲ改メテ左ノ如クスルベシ、

He has eaten no bread any he has drunk no water. 又ハ左ノ如シ、  
He has neisher eatn any bread nor has he drunk any water.

注、 重複否拒ハ間接ニ實證(事實ヲ否拒セズシテ確定スル)ヲ示スニ用ヒテ甚ダ佳ナ  
リ、例ヘバ次ノ甲例ノ如キ文句ヲ乙例ニ變化スルヲ得、意義更ニ變ゼズ、

I am somewhat acquainted with his virtues.....甲、

特別第四、 時、位置、價值等ノ度量ヲ示ス名詞ハ前置詞ヲ借ラズシテ副詞狀目的格ニ用  
ユルヲ得、其例左ノ如シ、

- (一) The man is seventy years old.
- (二) Our school is three miles from the church.
- (三) You are paid twenty dollars a week.

### 第六、 代表關係 代名詞及前位、

規則第九、 代名詞ノ人稱、性、及數ハ其前位即ハチ代表セラレタル語ノ人稱性及數ト一  
致ス其例左ノ如シ、

To him who in the love of nature holds communion with her visible forms, she speaks

A various language.

第一、 關係代名詞ハ其前位ト一致スルモノニシテ、人代名詞及他ノ代名詞ハ代表セラ  
レタル語(名詞若クハ名詞ノ價ヲ有スル者)ト共ニ一致ス、

第二、 代名詞ハ其前位即チ代表セラレタル語ト人稱、性、數ヲ同シクス、然レドモ代名  
詞ノ格ハ然ラズシテ、文句中ニ如何ナル構造ヲ有スルヤヲ見テ之ヲ決定ス、是ヲ以テ代名  
詞ヲ解剖スルニ規則ヲ要スルヲ常トシ、人稱、性、及數ノ一致ハ規則第九ニ據リ、格ニ關  
シテハ文詞論數多ノ規則中ノ適當ナル者ヲ引用スベシ、

### 練習第四十二

次ノ文句ニ規則第九ヲ應用セヨ、

第一、 Fools who came to sooff remained to pray.

[侮辱センタメ來リタル痴者等ハ祈禱センタメ殘ヘリ]

第二、 This pebulance ruined Essex, who had to deal with a spirit naturally proud

as his own.

〔此短氣ハ天性高慢ノ精神ヲ濫用スル「ヘッセツンヌ」ヲ失敗セシメタリ〕

第三、 shall be alone rational we call. Be pleased with nothing, if not blessed with all ?

〔吾人ガ明理ナリト稱賛スル彼人ハ、假令十分ノ幸ヲ得ザルモ、少シモ幸ヲ得ザラズナリ〕

第四、 A hand of slaves shall ne'er be mine,

〔奴隸ノ國ハ決シ吾ガ地ニマラザルベシ〕

第五、 Some natural tears they dropped, but wiped them soon.

〔彼人等ハ思ハヌモ涙ヲ垂レタルガ、直ニ之ヲ拭クタリ〕

第六、 They [the Indians] are shrinking before the mighty tide which is pressing them away; they must soon hear the roar of the last wave, which will settle over them forever.

〔印度人ハ其前面ニ湧進スル大潮ヲ見テ避勢セリ、彼等ハ絶ヘズ其上ニ打チ掛ル波聲ヲ早ク聞カザルベカラズ〕

第七、 Cold is thy brow, my son! and I am chill, As to my bosom I have tried to press thee.

〔我が子ヨ、汝ノ額冷ヘ、我モ亦タ冷ヘタリ、嗚呼我ノ我ガ胸ヲ以テ汝ニ密着セバヤ〕

第八、 Woodman, spare that tree; Touch not a single bough; In youth it sheltered me, And I'll protect it now. 'Twas my forefather's hand That placed it near his cot; Then, woodman, let it stand; Thy axe shall harm it not.

〔樵父ヨ、其木ヲ斫シテ、一枝ヲモ斬ラザン、其木ガ少年ノ時吾ヲ蔽ヒテ守リタリ、吾レ今ヤ之ヲ保護セン、昔シ吾ガ父小屋ノ傍ニ其木ヲ植ヘタリ、乞フ樵父ヨ、其木ヲ斫ル勿レ、斧ヲ以テ之ヲ害スベカラズ〕

### 規則第九之應用文詞論

#### 規則第九ニ係ル特別

特別第一、 單數ノ代名詞ハ次ニ掲グル者ヲ代表スルニ用ユ

其一、 二個若クハ三個以上ノ單數語ニシテ、or 若クハ nor ニテ連接セラレタル者、

其二、 一形態ヲ示ス集合名詞、

其三、 each, every, either, neither, one ナル語ニシテ一個ノ名個若クハ數個連接サレ

タル名詞ト連用スルトモ、之ヲ用ヒザルトモ可ナリ、

第一、 整正之構造、 次ニ掲グル例ハ特別第一ニ係ル整正ナル構造ヲ有スル者ナリ、

(一) But love or friendship, with its pleasures and embarrassments, was insufficient to occupy Swift's active mind.

(二) The army dragged itself along through the mud.

(iii) Each in his narrow cell forever laid.] Every season has its peculiar power of striking the mind. Has either girl finished her lesson? Neither of these classifications is in itself erroneous. One is seldom at a loss what to do with his money.

第二、錯誤之構造、次ニ掲グル例ハ、特別第一ヲ破壊セル者ナリ、

(一) When he shoots a partridge, a woodcock, or a pheasant, he gives them (it トスベシ) a way.

(ii) Society is not always answerable for the conduct of their (its トスベシ) members.

(iii) Each was the centre of their (his トスベシ) own fair world. Every plant and every flower proclaims their (its トセヨ) Maker's praise. Neither boy has learned their (his トスベシ) lesson. He cannot see one in prosperity without envying them (him トスベシ).

特別第二、

複數ノ代名詞ハ次ニ掲グル者ヲ代表スルニ用フ、

其一、二個若シハ二個以上ノ單數語ニシテ、andヲ以テ連接シ、複數形體ナルコトヲ示セル者、

其二、複數形體ナルヲ示ス集合名詞、

第一、整正之構造、次ニ掲グル例ハ特別第二ニ係ル整正構造ノ者ナリ、

(i) Both Cato and Cicero loved their country.

(ii) The clergy began to withdraw themselves.

第二、次ニ掲グル例ハ特別第二ヲ破壊セル者ナリ、

(i) Every man is entitled to liberty of conscience and freedom of opinion, if he does not pervert it (them トスベシ) to the injury of others.

(ii) The people were astonished at its (their トスベシ) success.

特別第三、

Who 及 Which ナル關係代名詞ハ常ニ説明ノ句ヲ誘出スルニ用ユラン That

ハ只ダ制限ノ句ヲ誘出スルニ用ヒラン、

第一、關係代名詞ハ其前位ニ新意ヲ附加シ、尙モ其前位ニ表セラルタル想念ヲ維持スル時、若シハ挿句ヲ要スル時ニ、説明ノ力ヲ有ス、次例ノ如シ、

(一) He gave me a letter, which he requested me to read.

(二) Words, which are signs of ideas, may be divided into eight parts of speech.

Who 及 which ナ説明ニ用ユルニ當リ、附屬ノ新命題ヲ生出シ、 and he, and she, and it, and this, and they, and these 等ト同價トナル、例之ハ今示シタル第一例ノ文句ハ He gave me a letter, and he requested me to read it ニ等シクシテ、第二例ノ文句ハ

Words, and these are the signs of ideas, may be divided, etc. ニ等ミトス、  
第二、關係代名詞ハ前位ニ表セラレタル事物ノ意味ヲ制限スルコト恰モ形容詞ノ如クナ  
ル時ニ、制限ノ力ヲ有ス、其例左ノ如シ、

(一) The army which conquered at Waterloo was commanded by Wellington.  
——The conquering army at Waterloo was, etc.

(二) The evil that men do lives after them. — [The evil done by men lives after them.]

第三、That ハ只々制限スルニ用ヒ、who 及 which ハ説明ノ句ニ用フルトハ、特別第  
三ニ言ヘル所ニシテ、時トシテハ之ニ關シテ嚴整ナル規則ヲ設クル者アリ(「ベイン」氏ハ  
殊ニ甚シ、同氏著作ノ英文典第二十二葉ヲ見ヨ)、然レドモ實ハ精細ニ其限界ヲ立ツルコ  
ト甚々難シテ、who 及 which ナテテ制限ノ句ヲ誘出スルコト屢アルコトナリ、然リト雖  
モ「who 及 which」ハ説明ノ句ヲ誘出シ、又々制限セリト明言シガタキ句ヲ誘出スルニ用  
ヒ、that ハ制限セリト斷言スルヲ得ベキ句ヲ誘出スルニ用フルト云フコトハ背クベカラザ  
ル通則ナリトス、殊ニ次ニ擧グル場合ニ在テハ who 及 which ヨリモ寧ロ that ナ用ユ  
ルヲ良トス、

甲、最大級形容詞ノ後、

例、 This is the best that I have seen.

乙、疑問代名詞ノ後、及ビ指示及不定ノ形容詞若クハ代名詞ノ後、

Who that has common-sense can say so?

All that he knows.

Some people that were there.

Any man that says so.

The same that I bought.

例、 丙非人稱ノ to be ナル働詞ノ後、

例、 It was my father that said so.

丁、人及事物ニ係ル共同關係ノ後、

例、 The lady and the lady that we saw.

戊、不定ノ意義ヲ以テ使用シタル名詞ニテ成ル前位ノ後、

例、 Thoughts that breathe, and words, that burn.

特別第四、相異ナル人稱ノ單數代名詞ノ位置ハ、第二人稱ハ第一人稱及第三人稱ニ先  
シ、第三人稱ハ第一人稱ニ先シ、先シタル者トス、  
複數代名詞ニ在テハ、we ハ首位ヲ占メ、You ハ次位ヲ占メ、They ハ尾位ヲ占ム、左例ノ  
如シ、  
(一) you and he will go.

- (二) He and I will go,
- (三) We and they start to-morrow,

單數及複數代名詞ノ位置ニ差異アルノ理ハ、單數ニ在テ發語者(一)ハ自己ヲ謙遜セン爲メニ、其位ヲ聽者及ビ談柄トナレル人ノ後ニ置キ、複數ニ在テハ、同理ニ依リ、自己ト最モ親昵ニ交接スル人等(此場合ニハ自己モ其中ニ含有セラル、故ニトモナル)ヲ第一位ニ置キ、次ニ聽者ヲ置キ、次ニ談柄トナレル人等ヲ置クナリ、  
 特別第五、相異ナル數人稱ヲ代表スル代名詞ハ、第二人稱ニ一致センヨリ、寧ロ第一人稱ニ一致シ又タ第三人稱ニ一致センヨリ、寧ロ第二人稱ニ一致セザル可カラズ、其例左ノ如シ、

- (一) John and you and I will do our duty.
- (二) You and Mary may do the work between you.

規則第九之破壞

其一、前位若クハ代表セラレタル語ニ對シ代名詞ガ有スル關係ガ分明ナラザル時、其例左ノ如シ、

He [Philip] wrote to that distinguished philosopher [Aristotle] in terms the most polite and flattering, begging of him [Aristotle] to undertake his [Alexander's] education, and to bestow upon him [Alexander] those useful lessons which his [Philip's] numerous avocations would not allow him [Philip] to bestow. — Goldsmith ノ文句、

此文句ニ在テハ各代名詞ガ如何ナル名詞ヲ代表セルヤヲ決スルコト甚ダ困難ニシテ、遂ニ全文ノ意義ヲ曖昧朦朧ナラシメタリ、是ヲ以テ左ノ要件アリ、  
 豫戒第一、前位若クハ代表セラレタル語ト代名詞ノ關係ガ曖昧不明ナラザランコトヲ要ス

注、疑ハシキ關係ヲ有スル代名詞ノ爲メニ生シタル不明ノ意義ヲシテ分明ナラシメソ爲メ、文辭ヲ改正スルノ一法ハ、名詞ヲ復用スルカ、若クハ代表セラルベキ名詞ノ價ヲ有スル言辭ヲ用ユ、是レ屢アル所ナリ、例之ヘバ今示シタル文ヲ次ノ如ク改正スルコトヲ得、

Philip wrote to Aristotle in terms the most polite and flattering, begging of that distinguished philosopher to undertake the education of Alexander, and to bestow upon him those useful lessons that his own numerous avocations would not allow him to bestow.

其二、適當ナル前位ナシテ關係代名詞ヲ使用スル時其例左ノ如シ、

Be diligent; without which you can never succeed.

此文句ニ在テ、which ナル關係代名詞ガ係ルベキ前位ハ diligent ナル形容詞ナリ、然レドモ關係代名詞ノ眞性ハ只ダ名詞若クハ名詞ノ價アル者ノミヲ代表スルニアレド、右ノ例ハ正シカラザルナリ、

此種ノ文句ヲ正スノ法ハ關係代名詞ニ代フルニ形容詞ガ含有スル意義ヲ示スベキ抽象名詞ヲ以テス、故ニ前例ヲ改メテ、*Be diligent; for without diligence you cannot succeed* トスベシ、是ヲ以テ左ノ要件アリ、

豫戒第二、各關係代名詞ハ其前位ニ名詞若シハ名詞ノ價アル者ヲ有セザル可カラズ、其三、關係代名詞ヲ省略スルニ其宜シキヲ得ザル時、其例左ノ如シ、

*He is still in the situation you saw him.*

此文句ニ於テ、第一ノ命題ト之ニ附屬スル句 *you saw him* トヲ連結スル爲メニハ、*in* ト *which* ナル關係代名詞ヲ要スルナリ、故ニ之ヲ *He is still in the situation in which you saw him* ト改メザルベカラズ、若シ *in which* ナキ時ハ、此文句ノ諸部ハ善ク結合スルコトナシ、是ヲ以テ左ノ要件アリ

豫戒第三、文句ニ結合力ヲ付與スルノ必要アルトキ、關係代名詞ト之ヲ支配スル前置詞トヲ挿入スルコトヲ怠ルベカラズ、

### 特別俗話式様之注

第一、性之難問、不定性ノ語ヲ代表スル場合ニハ第三人稱單數ノ男性代名詞ヲ使用スルコト通常ナリ、左例ノ如シ、  
*Let every one attend to his own business. A parent should love his child.*

然ルニ性ヲ異ニスル二個ノ單數名詞ノ各個ヲ代表セント欲スル時ニ、一ノ困難ヲ生ズ、例之ハ左ノ如シ、

*If an ox gore a man or a woman so that ..... die.*

若シ爰ニ單數代名詞ヲ用ヒテ *they die* トスレバ、特別第一ヲ破壊ス、而ルニ英語ニハ普通性ノ第三人稱單數代名詞ナキ故ニ、斯ノ如キ場合ニ於テハ、止ムヲ得ズ、各性ヲ有スル兩代名詞ヲ復言スルガ如キ不都合ノ構文ヲナサザルヲ得ズ故ニ上例ヲ *If an ox gore a man or a woman so that he or she die* トナスナリ、去レドモ大家ハ大抵特別第一ニ背クニモ拘ラズ複數代名詞ヲ用ヒ、可成的正法ニ從ヒテ兩代名詞ヲ復言スルノ迂ヲ避ケタリ、

第二、*Which* ノ用法、*Which* ナル關係代名詞ハ一個ノ命題ヲ其前位トナスコトヲ得、例之ハ *Cesar crossed the Rubicon, which was in effect a declaration of war.* ノ如キ是レニシテ、*which* ノ前位ハ *Rubicon* ナル名詞ニ非ズシテ、*Cæ* crossed the *Rubicon* ナル全命題ナリ、

一個形體ナルヲ示ス集合名詞ガ前位ニアル時ハ、其名詞ガ人ヲ指スニモ拘ハラズ、*Which* ナル關係代名詞ヲ用ヒテ、*who* ナル關係代名詞ヲ用ヒザルヲ以テ通法トス、左例ノ如シ、  
*The family which they considered as usurpers.*

單ニ名ナリト思フベキ固有名詞、即ハチ十分ニ人稱ヲ有スト思フベカラザル名號ハ WHO  
ヲ用ヒズシテ、which ナリテ代表ス、左例ノ如シ、

Herod—*which is but another name for cruelty.*

第三、Whose. 某學者ハ規則ヲ設ケテ曰ク、whose ハ只ダ男性若クハ女性ノ名詞ヲ代  
表スルノミニ用ヒラルベシト、然レドモ詞論上ヨリ見ルモ、近世最良ノ慣例ヨリ見ルモ決  
シテ其理ナシ、昔ヘ「アングロ、サクソン」語ニテハ持格 *Whos* 「whose ノ原語」ハ中性ニモ  
男性ニモ女性ニモ用ヒラレタリ、又々詩ヲ見ルニ whose ガ中性名詞ニ關係スルコトニ少ナ  
カラザルコトナリ、其例左ノ如シ、

(一) *That undiscovered country From whose birth no traveller returns.*

是レ「シエーンズビーア」氏ノ詩句ナリ、

(二) *The poor banished insects whose intent, Though they did ill, was innocent.*

第四、前置詞ヲ有ス關係代名詞、*that* ナル關係代名詞ハ之ヲ支配スル前置詞ヲ先  
セシムヘカラズシテ、其前置詞ヲ附屬ノ句ノ後ニ置カザルヘカラズ、左例ノ如シ、

*The steamboat that I went up the river in was sunk.*

which 及 whom ナ支配スル前置詞ハ、附屬ノ句ノ尾ニ置クヲ得レドモ、近代ノ慣例ニ在テ  
ハ、之ヲ關係代名詞ノ前隣ニ置ク、之ヲ例スルニ、*The steamer which I went up the*

*river in* ナリトモ、*The steamer in which I went up the river* ト云ハハ語調ノ美ナ  
ルヲ覺ニ、多シノ場合ニ於テ、*that* ナリテ附屬ノ句ヲ誘出シ、其句ノ次ニ前置詞ヲ置ク  
トキハ、前置詞ヲ前有スル which 若クハ whom ナリテ其句ヲ誘出シタル時ヨリモ更ニ強  
勢ナル說話トナルナリ、例之ヘン *The mosquito is good for nothing of which I know* ト  
言フハ、*The mosquito is good for nothing that I know of* ト言フヘリ遙カニ華美ナリト  
ス、

第五、次例ノ構造ニ見ル者ハ豫戒第二ノ原則ノ例外ナリ、

*And do you now strew flowers in his way, That comes in triumph over Pompey's blood? — Shakespeare.*

此文ニテ *that* ノ前位ハ *his* ナル持格代名詞ナリ、若シ *his* ハ一ノ繫屬語タルニ過ギザ  
レバ、關係代名詞ノ前位トナルヘカラズト云ヘン、之ニ答ヘテ曰フハ、*his* ハ *of him* ト同  
價ニシテ、*his* ノ中ニ含有スル *him* ハ正シク *that* ナル關係代名詞ノ前位トナルベシト、  
第六、*as* 及 *but* *as* ハ屢關係代名詞ヲ代理スルコトアリ、*same* 及 *such* ノ次ニ在ル時  
殊ニ然リ、左例ノ如シ、

(一) *Art thou afraid To be the same in thine own act and valor As thou art in desire?*

(二) *Tears such as angels weep burst forth.*

But ハ否拒辭ノ後ニ在ル時ニ關係代名詞ノ如クニ用ヒラレ、其力ハ Phot not 又ハ Whi-  
ch not ト同一ナリ、左例ノ如シ、

There is no fireside, howsoe'er defended, But has [ ] which has not] one vacant  
chair.

### 第七、 連接關係

#### 第一項、 前置詞及其目的

規則第十、 其一、 前置詞ハ名詞若クハ代名詞ヲ或ハ他ノ語ニ連接ス、  
其二、 前置詞ニ屬スル名詞若クハ代詞名ハ目句格ニ在リ、

### 練習第四十四

次ノ文句ニ規則第十ヲ應用セヨ、

第一、 To him who in the love of Nature holds Communion with her visible forms,  
she speaks A various language.

〔自然ヲ愛シテ其見ルヘキ森羅万象ト交通スル人ニ向ヒ、自然ハ種々ノ語ヲ談ス〕

第一、 The eulogium pronounced on the character of the State of South Carolina, by  
the honorable gentleman, for her Revolutionary and other merits, meets my hearty  
concurrency.

〔尊敬スヘキ貴顯ガ南加各米奈州ノ改革及其他ノ大事蹟ニ付キ、檄文中ニ書ヘテ發文ハ、能ク余ガ心志ニ符合ス〕

第二、 Into the jaws of death, into the mouth of hell Rode the Six Hunded.  
〔六百騎ハ九死ノ苦境ニ馳馬セリ〕

第四、 At midnight in his guarded tent, The Turk was dreaming of the hour when  
Greece, her knee in supplicance bent, Should tremble at his power.

〔土耳其人ハ中夜守護ノ幕中ニ眠ルリ、希臘人ガ哀訴ノ膝ヲ屈シ、威力ノ下ニ戰慄セラルヲ夢ミタリ〕

第五、 But now no sound of laughter was heard amongst the foes, A wild and  
wrathful clamor from all the vanguard rose.

〔今ハ敵中ニ笑聲止ム、怒聲ノ聲聲ヲ發シテ起ル〕

第六、 Run to your houses, fall upon your knees, Pray to the gods to intermit  
the plague That needs must light on this ingratuide.

〔汝ノ家ニ走り歸リ、跪坐シテ神ニ哀聲ノ聲ノヲ請フニ、神ハ此眞實無情ノ罪ヲ容レズ〕

第七、 The trees are now in their fullest foliage and brightest verdure; the woods are  
gay wish the clustered flowers of the laurel; the air is perfumed by the sweetbrier



and the wild rose; the meadows are enamelled with clover blossoms; while the young apple, the peach, and the plum begin to swell, and the cherry to glow among the green leaves.

〔樹々ハ方サニ新葉ヲ抽ビテ若々綠々タリ、森林ハ桂花ヲ茂シテ其美愛スベシ、月桂野荊花ヲ開ヒテ風香ヲ含ミ、牧場青椿ヲ敷テ玻璃ヲ碎クガ如シ、桃梅林檜漸ク新芽ヲ露ハシ、櫻花生茂シテ綠葉ニ交ハル〕

### 規則第十之應用文詞論

#### 規則第十之破壞

其一、前置詞ノ位置ガ代名詞目的ニ隔リタル時、其例左ノ如シ、

*Who did you get that book from?*

此レ語ヲ排列スル普通俗話上ノ法ナリ、而シテ此文ニテハ目的ガ之ヲ支配スル前置詞ニ隔タル故ニ格ノ式樣ヲ誤リ易カラシムルヲ甚メ大ナリ(上文ノ *Who* ナ *Whom* ニ改ムベシ)、是ヲ以テ左ノ要件アリ、

豫戒第一、支配スル前置詞ガ其代名詞目的ニ隔ルトキハ、其代名詞ヲシテ目的格式樣ヲ有セシムルニ注意セザルベカラズ、

其二、二個若クハ二個以上ノ代名詞目的ニ於テ支配スル前置詞ヲ省略スル時、其例左ノ如シ、

*I lent the book to some one, I know not who.*

此文句ニ於テ *Who* ノ前ニ *to* ナル前置詞ヲ省略セリ、然ルニ *to Who* ト言ハハ規則第十ヲ破壞スルガ故ニ、*Whom* 若クハ *to Whom* トセザルベカラズ、是ヲ以テ左ノ要件アリ、  
豫戒第二、支配スル前置詞ノ省略アルトキハ、其代名詞ニ目的格式樣ヲ有セシムルニ注意セザルベカラズ、

### 特別俗話式樣之注

第一、*Between* 及 *Among* *Between* ハ正シク *by twain* 即チ *by two's* (「二ツリ依テ」ト云フ意義ナルガ故ニ、二個ヨリ多シノ者ニ用ユベカラズ、是ヲ以テ *Mother divided the apple between sister and me* ト云フヲ得レドモ、*between John, James, and Martha* ト云フヲ得ズ然レドモ *among* 若クハ *amongst* ナル前置詞ハ二個ヨリ多キ事物ニ分配スルコトヲ示スニ用ユ、*The booty was divided among the forty thieves* ノ如シ、

第二、恰當ノ前置詞、語ニハ只一ノ前置詞ニノミ連合スル者多ケレドモ、諸種ノ前置詞ニ連合スル者又々多シ、但シ前置詞異ナルニ從テ其意義大ニ變ズ、故ニ指示セント欲スル關係ヲ精細ニ表示スルベキ前置詞ヲ撰ブニ注意セザルベカラズ、(之ヲナスニ當リ不審ノ生ズルアレハ字彙ヲ見テ之ヲ知ルベシ)、  
第三、目的ノ除去 時トシテハ前置詞ノ目的ガ除去セラル、トアリ、例ハ、*We*

found the man [that] we were looking for ノ如シ、

第四、 But all but but him ノ如キ構法中ノ but ハ接続詞ノ but ナリト誤解スル一  
屢マンドモ、前置詞ノ but ト接続詞ノ but トハ其源ヲ異ニス、茲ニ云フ者ハ元來 on  
the outside of ナル意義ヲ有シタル古キ前置詞ニシテ、從ツテ without 若シハ except ナル  
意義ヲ有ス、故ニ all but he 又ハ none but he ノ如キ熟語ハ文法ニ違ハリ、其他 but  
ハ to ナ有セザル不定辭ヲ次位ニ有スル一ヲ得、例ハ He does nothing but [to] sleep  
ノ如シ、

第二項 接続詞

規則第十一、 接続詞ノ語若シハ熟語若シハ命題ヲ連接ス、其例左ノ如シ、

(一) Oxygen AND hydrogen are called gases.

(二) He strove with all his powers AND to a noble end.

(三) [The sun shines] BECAUSE [the sky is clear.

接続詞ハ連接ノ職ヲ有スナル規則ノ例外ニアリ、左ノ如シ、

第一、 That ナル接続詞ハ主要命題ノ主トナル句ヲ誘出スルノミノ職ヲ爲スコトアリ、  
例ハ That you have wronged me doth appear in this ノ如シ、去レドモ是ハ必竟省略  
顛倒ノ場合ニ過ギズ、 It doth appear in this that you have wronged me ト同ク

者ナリ、

第二、 對立接続詞ヲ有スル構文ニ在テ、先行接続詞即ハチ提起接続詞(二個相並ブ接続  
詞ノ前ナル者)ハ連接ノ力アリト言ヒ難クシテ、連接力ハ却テ承後接続詞(二個ノ後ナル  
者)ニ在リ、解剖ニ於テハ相對立スル二接続詞ノ前者ヲ提起對立接続詞 Introductory  
correlative conjunction ト云フヲ善トス、

練習第四十六

次ノ文句ニ規則第十一ヲ應用セヨ、

第一、 Lightly and brightly breaks away The morning from her mantle gray.

第二、 Right sharp and quick the bells all night Rang out from Bristol town.

第三、 Men must work and women must weep, Though storms be hidden and waters  
sleep.

第四、 A wise man will make haste to forgive, because he knows the true value of  
time, and will not suffer it to pass away in unnecessary pain.

第五、「賢者ハ時光ノ眞假ヲ知ルガ故ニ、可及的政事ヲ尤メズ、又々無益ノ憂患ヲナサズ」  
These wave their town flag in the arched gateway; and stand, rolling their drum; but to no purpose.

第六、「此等ノ人ハ彎月門ニ部旗ヲ翻ヘシ、鼓聲ヲ槌ツテ立テリ、然レドモ亦々何ノ目的モナキナリ」  
For none made sweeter melody Than did the poor blind boy.

第七、「體ハ緑色ニモ赤モ、藍色ニモ赤モ」  
Whether the thing was green or blue.

第八、「汝ハ風潮ヲ免ヘンコトヲ請フ」  
No leave ask'st thou of either wind or tide.

第九、「彼ハ那威ノ人民ニ聯合セシヤ、又々隱密ノ幫助ト利トナテ叛人ヲ囂察セシヤ、又々此両党ノ兵ヲ率ヒテ自國ノ危險ヲ起スニ盡力セシヤ、吾之ヲ知ラザルナリ」  
whether he was combined with those of Norway; or did line the rebel with hidden help and vantage; or that with both He labor'd in his country's wrack, I know not.

第十、「語ハ必竟ノ人間想像ノ符號タルニ過ギズ、若シ世人之ヲ知リ、語ヲ事物夫レ自ラト誤解セザルトキハ、百多ノ口論モ大ニ減少スルナルベシト信ズ」  
This, I think, I may at least say, that we should have a great many fewer disputes in the world, if words were of our ideas only, and not for things thense-

Ives.

「語ハ必竟ノ人間想像ノ符號タルニ過ギズ、若シ世人之ヲ知リ、語ヲ事物夫レ自ラト誤解セザルトキハ、百多ノ口論モ大ニ減少スルナルベシト信ズ」

### 規則第十一之應用文詞論

規則第十一ニ係ル特別

特別第一、接讀詞ニハ對合スル他ノ接讀詞ト伴生スル者アリ、而シテ斯ク對立スル兩者ニ在テ、提起接讀詞ト承後接讀詞ト相對セザルベカラズ、

Though ハ yet ヲ要ス、左例ノ如シ、  
Though deep, yet clear. though gentle, yet not dull.

Whether ハ or ヲ要ス、左例ノ如シ、  
Whether the thing was green or blue.

Either ハ or ヲ要ス、左例ノ如シ、  
None of them either returned his gaze or seemed to notice it.

Neither ハ nor ヲ要ス、左例ノ如シ、  
Neither in France nor in Spain does this custom exist.

注 either...or 及び neither...nor ハ、精細ニ言ヘバ「兩者ノ中何レカヲ取ル」又  
ハ「取ラヌ」ト言フヲ示ス接續詞ナリ、近世ニ至リ著作家ハ二個以上ノ語ヲ連接スル  
ニ此等ノ對立接續詞ヲ用ユルヲ尤メズ、

Both and ナ要ス、左例ノ如シ、

Power to judge both quick and dead.

As...as ハ實證ノ比較ニ用ユ、其例左ノ如シ、

Mine is as good as yours.

So...as ハ否拒ノ比較ニ用ユ、左例ノ如シ、

But his is not so good as either.

又々制限ノ比較ヲ示スニ用ユ、左例ノ如シ、

Be so good as to read this letter.

特別第二 一頂ハ「THAN ナ要シ、一頂ハ AS ナ要スル」ニ項ヲ連結スルニ當リ、此等接  
續詞ノ只一ノミヲ用ヒテ兩様ノ關係ヲ示スガ如キ連結方アルベカラズ、左例ヲ見ヨ、

(一) He was more beloved but not so much admired as Cynthio.

此文句ニテハ but ナ以テ more beloved 及び so much admired ノ二頂ヲ連接シ、He ガ  
Cynthio ニ對スルニ様ノ關係ヲ示スニ as ナル接續詞ヲ用ヒタリ、然レドモ more below-

ed ハ比較ヲ有スル項ナレバ、than ナ伴有スルヲ要ス(何トナレバ more beloved as  
Cynthio ト云フ能ハザレバナリ)、故ニ此等ノ場合ニ在テハ恰當ノ接續詞ヲ誘出スルガ爲  
ニ、構文ヲ改正セザル可カラズ、即チ上例モ左ノ如クスベシ、

He was more beloved than Cynthio, but not so much admired.

(二) I would do as much or more work than John.

錯誤、 than ナル接續詞ヲ as much 及 more ナルニ關係ヲ示スニ用ヒタリ、然レドモ  
as much ハ as ナル接續詞ヲ伴有スルベキ項ナリ、故ニ上文ヲ次ノ如ク改ムベシ、

I would do as much work as John, or more [than he].

特別第三 將ニ示サント欲スル連接ヲ表スルニ適シタル接續詞ヲ用ユルニ注意スベシ、

第一、 疑惑、恐懼、若シハ否拒ノ意義ヲ有スル言辭ノ後ニハ、lest, but, but what, but  
that ノ代リニ that ナ用ヒザル可カラズ、左例ノ如シ、  
I do not doubt that [but that] 又ハ but what ナ用ヒズ] he is honest.

第二、 else, other, rather 其他凡テ比較ノ語ノ後ニ、比較ノ終項ヲ誘出スルニ than ナ用  
ヒテ but, besides 又ハ except ナ用ユル可カラズ、其例左ノ如シ、

He no sooner retires but [than] to be surprised his heart burns with devotion.

第三、 than ハ屢前置詞ノ代リニ誤用セラル、トアリ、左例ノ如シ、

(一) That is a very different statement than [from ナラザルベカラズ] what you made yesterday.

(二) I should prefer being right than [to ナラザルベカラズ] being President.

特別俗話式様之注

第一、<sup>〇〇〇〇〇〇</sup>接續詞ノ脩辭論、<sup>〇〇〇〇〇〇</sup>接續詞ノ省畧ハ屢說話ノ語意ヲ強クシ、次例ノ如シ、

Through many a dark and dreary vale They passed, and many a region dolorous;  
O'er many a frozen, many a fiery Alp, Rocks, caves, lakes, fens, bogs, dens, and shades  
of death—— A universe of death.

之ニ反シテ接續詞ヲ反覆シテ言フ時ハ、細説ノ意ヲ強クシ、左例ノ如シ、

Seasons return; but hotho he returns Day, or the sweet approach of even or morn,  
Or sight of vernal bloom, or summer's rose, Or flock, or herds, or human face  
divine.

詩ニ於テ、And……and ナ both……and ノ代リニ用ヒ、or……or ナ either……or ノ代リニ用ヒ、nor……nor ナ neither……nor ノ代リニ用フルハ屢アリ、次例ノ如シ、

一) And trump and timbrel answered them.

(二) I whom nor avarice nor pleasure move.

第二、than ナ伴有スル名詞若クハ代名詞ハ其次ニ附屬スル句(此句ハ常ニ省畧ス)ノ構造ニ關シテ、主格トナリ、又々目的格トナル、次例ノ如シ、

(一) I esteem you more than they [esteem you].

(二) I esteem you more than them [than I esteem them 二回ナリ].

than whom ノ特異ナル構法ハ次例ヲ以テ解明セン、

(一) Beelzebub, than whom, Satan except, none higher sat.

(二) Pope, than whom few men had more vanity.

今此文句ノ關係代名詞ニ人代名詞ヲ代置スルトキハ、其人代名詞ハ主格ヲラザルベカラズシテ、None sat higher than he 及 had more vanity than he トナスベキナリ、然ルニ whom ハ目的格ナレバ、上ノ二文句ハ背理ノ構造ト謂ハザルヲ得ズ、然レドモ有名ノ著作家ハ此ノ如キ構法ヲ用ユル者甚ダ多キガ故ニ、吾人ハ殆ンド此法ヲ拒ム能ハザルナリ、蓋シ是レ羅句語ニテ quo ナル獨立格(ablative case)ヲ伴有スル比較項ト英倫俗話トヲ混亂セルヨリ起リタル者ナリ、羅句語ニテ quo ハ than who ト云フ意義ニシテ、than ハ獨立格ニテ表示セラル、故ニ古典學者ハ英語ヲ書スルニ當リ than ナ補入シ、又々羅句語文詞論ニ慣レテ目的格ヲ用ユル誤ヲ來タシタリ、

### 第八、絕對構造及不羈構造

主格絕對、不羈、間投詞、

規則第十二、其一、名詞若クハ代名詞ニシテ其格ガ一切他ノ語ニ關涉セザル時ハ、主格絕對ニ在リ、

其二、主格不羈及間投詞ハ文句ノ他部ニ對シテ一モ文法的關係ヲ有セズ、

第一、絕對構造絕對構造ニ於ケル名詞若クハ代名詞ハ常ニ分詞ト連結シ、以テ一ノ熟語ヲ作クル、其例左ノ如シ、

(一) *Spring returning, the swallows reappear.*

(二) *They being unprepared, we began the attack.*

此構造ヲ稱シテ絕對ト云フ、何トナレバ名詞若クハ代名詞ハ文句中ノ他ノ語ニ羈屬セズシテ、分離スレバナリ、「アングロ、サクソン」語ノ絕對構造ハ賓格 *ative* ナリシナリ、「ミルトン」時代ノ著家ニ於テ尙モ其構法ヲ見ル、次例ノ如シ、

*And him destroyed For whom all this was made. all this will soon Follow.*——

*Paradise Lost.*

茲ニ *him* ハ目的格ナラスシテ、實ニ賓格ナリ、元來格ノ語尾變化ヲ失ヒタル故ニ、諸格ヲ混同スル「トナレリ、而シテ近世ノ慣例ニハ此構造ニ主格ヲ要ス、

### 練習第四十八

次ノ文句ニ規則第十二ヲ應用セヨ、

第一、*The president having given his assent the bill became a law.*

〔大統領允許シテ、議案ハ法律トナレリ〕

第二、*Those barbarous ages past succeeded next the birthday of invention.*

〔野蛮ノ年代去リテ、發明ノ生日來レリ〕

第三、*Then shall I be no more. And Adam, wedded to another Eve, shall live with her enjoying; I [being] extinct.*

〔然ル時ニハ予ハ最早アラザルニシテ、而シテ「アダム」ハ「イーヴ」ニ嫁シテ永ク樂シキ生活ヲ去ラン〕

第四、*Success being now hopeless, preparations were made for retreat.*

〔今ハ成功ヲ望ムナシニテ、退去ノ備ヲナセリ〕

第五、*Thou looking on, shamed to be overcome or overreached Would utmost vigor raise.*

〔汝ハ考ヘツ、勝タル又タハ欺カレン「ト」ヲ耻チテ、非常ノ勇氣ヲ起スナラン〕

第二、不羈構造、不羈構造ニ付テ次ニ掲グル場合ヲ生ズ、  
甲、人物ヲ直格ニ指名シ、其名詞ハ第二人稱ニ在リテ、「コムマ」等「」ヲ以テ働詞ト分

カタルナル時、其例次ノ如シ、

Horatius, saith the consul. As thou sayest, so let it be.

乙、過剩語ノ法ヲ用ヒ、語ヲ強メン爲メ不意ニ發生スル時、其例左ノ如シ、

The boy, oh ! where was he ?

丙、歎息(修辭學語象ノ一)ニヨリ、語ヲ間投詞ノ如クニ用ユル時、其例左ノ如シ、

Oh ! deep enchanting prelude to repose !

練習第四十九

次ノ文句ニ規則第十二ヲ應用セヨ、

第一、Awake, my St. John, leave all meaner things.

〔覺悟セヨ、聖「ジョン」ヨ、凡テ卑シキ事物ヲ棄テヨ〕

第二、O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God.

〔嗚呼自然ノ智慧深遠ナル哉〕

第三、A horse ! a horse ! my kingdom for a horse !

〔馬ヨ、馬ヨ、馬ニ適ヌル王國ヨ〕

第四、Plato, thou reasonest well.

〔「プラトナー」ヨ、汝ハ理ヲ以テ克ム〕

第五、O thou that with surpassing glory crowned, Look'ss from thy sole dominion, like the God Of this new world.

O sun ! to tell thee how I hate thy beams.

〔嗚呼汝ハ榮名ヲ負テ此新世界ノ神ノ如ク汝ノ領地ヨリ下界ヲ視ル、嗚呼汝太陽ヨ、予ハ汝ノ光明ヲ羨ヤム者ナリ〕

第六、The gallant king, he skirted skill The margin of that mighty hill.

〔豪氣ナル王ヨ、彼ハ其大邱ノ傍ニ尙ホ在リ〕

間投詞、 間投詞ハ「文句ノ他部ニ一モ文法的關係ヲ有セズ」トシテ解剖ス、

interjection (間ニト云フ義ナル inter ト投スト云フ義ナル Jaecere トヨリ來ル)ナル語ハ數事物ノ間ニ投入セラレタル成分ヲ異スル事物即チ文句ノ語中ニ投入セラレタル者ト云フ義ナリ、說話ハ思想ヲ表スル者ナレドモ間投詞ハ感觸ヲ表示ス、故ニ精細ニ言ハバ品詞ニアラズ、詳言スレバ文句ノ部分ニアラズシテ、感動ノ發現シタル者ナリ、而シテ別ニ全文ヲ作リテ之ヲ細説スルヲ得ヘキ者トス、

次ニ擧グル者ヲ見テ間投詞使用ノ解明ヲ知ルベシ、

(一) Ah ! then and there was hurrying to and fro.

(二) Alas ! both for the deed and for the cause.

- (三) *Alack!* when once we have our grace forgot, nothing goes right.
  - (四) They open'd their mouth wide against me, and said: "Aha! aha!"
  - (五) *Hy!* my lord, *fy!* a soldier, and afraid!
  - (六) "*Fu* laugh'st thou, *toehiel*, my visison to scorn?"
  - (七) "*Ho!* shifts she thus?" King Henry cried.
  - (八) *Hush!* *hark!* a deep sound strikes like a rising knell.
  - (九) *O* Nature, how in every charm supreme!
  - (十) But she is in her grave—and *oh* The efference to me!
- 注、第九第十ノ二例ハ○若シハ○*Oh* ナル間投詞ヲ書スルニ當リ注目スルベキ區別ヲ示ス、○ハ只メ主格不羈ノ徴ナレドモ、*Oh* ハ愁訴、憂悲等ノ特異ノ感情ヲ示ス、又注、二三普通ノ間投詞ノ詞論必要ナレハ左ニ之ヲ示ス、
- Alas!* *ah* *lesso*—*O* [*me*] miserable. *Adieu, a Dieu*—[*I* commend you] to God.  
*Good-bye, God b' wi' ye*—God be with you. *O* dear, *O Dieu*—*O* God.  
*Amen, verily, truly, yea* ノ意義ヲ有スル希伯拉ノ副。

第九、 働詞及働詞樣語之文詞論  
 第一項、 不定辭、

規則第一、 不定辭ハ名詞若シハ働詞若シハ形容詞ニ係屬シ、 働詞ニ於ケルト同様ノ補足及變形語ヲ取ル、

第一、 不定辭ハ常ニ文詞論十二規則ノ一若シハ特別ノ一ヲ以テ整理スルコトヲ得、 然レドモ此働詞狀語ノ構造ヲ決定スルニ屢困難ノ生ズルアルガ故ニ、 恰當ナル規則アルニモセヨ、 寧ロ今示シタル規則ヲ用ユルヲ可トス、

第二、 不定辭ニ附着スル *to* ハ *bid*, *dare*, *need*, *make*, *see*, *hear*, *feel*, *let* ノ發働語法ニ於ケル働詞ノ後ニ省畧スルナ一般トス、 左例ノ如シ、

*Bid him go.* I hear thee speak of the better. I dare do all that may become a man.

第三、 不定辭ハ時アツテ絶對ナルコトアリ、 其例左ノ如シ、

*To tell you the truth, I do not like him.* Marley was dead, to begin with

第二項、 「ゼラント」

規則第二、 「ゼラント」ハ名詞ノ構造ヲ有シ、 又働詞ノ補足及變形ノ構造ヲ有ス、

第一、 「ゼラント」ガ名詞ノ構造ヲ有スルコトハ、 前置詞ニ羈屬シ又々持格ヲ取リテ、 働詞ノ主トスメン目的トスベキコトヲ示シテ解明スルヲ得、 次例ノ如シ、

- (一) *Reaping is profitable.*
- (二) *Bees are skilful in building.*



- (三) His [又ハ John's] making money is no proof of merit.
- 第二、「ヤラシヤ」ガ働詞ノ構造ヲ有スルコトハ、目的若シハ他ノ補足ヲ取り得且ツ副詞狀變形語ヲ取り得ルヲ示シテ解説セラル、其例左ノ如シ、
- (一) Bees are skilful in building their hives.
- (二) On growing old, he became avaricious.
- (三) Reading daily is profitable.

第三項 分辭

規則第三、分詞ノ働詞ノ補足及變形ヲ以テ形容詞ノ構造ヲ有ス、其例左ノ如シ、

- (一) What man seeing this, does not blush?
- 茲ニ seeing ナル分詞ノ形容詞ノ構造ヲ有シ、(man ナル名詞ヲ變形ス)、this ナル目的格代名詞ヲ目的トナス、
- (二) Verse, in the finest mould of fancy cast, Was lumber in an age so void of taste.

茲ニ cast ナル分詞ノ形容詞トナリ verse ナル名詞ヲ變形シ、in the finest mould of fancy ナル熟語ニ變形セラル、

注、"He was wonderfully active, considering his age". "Granting what you say, does it answer any argument?" 等ノ如キ形容詞ノ關係分明ナラザル文句ニ在テハ、分

詞ハ不羈ニ用ヒラレタリトカ若クハ絶對ニ用ヒラレタリト云フヲ得ベシ、

第四項 接續法

規則第四、接續法ハ偶發ノ事及未然ノ事ヲ示ス時、若クハ相反スル事實ヲ語ル時ニ當リ、釋屬命題ニ使用スル者ナリ、其例左ノ如シ、

- (一) If he continue to study, he will improve.
- (二) If he were guilty [as he is not], he would suffer.
- 第一、然レドモ釋屬命題ニ語ル事情ガ實事ナラント思ハノ時ニハ、直說法ニヨリテ説話スベシ左例ノ如シ、
- (一) If he has money [彼ハ錢ヲ有スルト想像スル], he keeps it.
- (二) If he is guilty [恐ク彼レ有罪ナラント想像スル], he will suffer.
- 第二、接續法ノ使用ニ係ル實際ノ良則ハ曰シ「可成法助働詞ノ意ヲ含ムトキニモ、未來助働詞ノ意ヲ含ムトキニモ、之ヲ用フベシ」ト是レナリ、其例左ノ如シ、
- (一) Though he [may] shay me, I will trust in him.
- (二) Go thy way lest a worse fate [should] befall thee.
- (三) If it were [should be] done, when 'tis done, then 'twere [would be] well  
It were [should be] done quickly.
- 第三、直說法及接續法ノ何レカヲ擇ブベキカハ古來ヨリ著大ナル困難ノ一トナレリ、

多シノ文法家が接續法ノ使用ニ關シテ發見考思シタル好法アルガ如クナレドモ、近世ノ慣例ハ之ヲ用ヒズ、而シテ恐ク接續法式様ハ早晚我が國語ニ其跡ヲ絶ツニ至ルベシ、

第五項、 SHALL 及 WILL.

規則第五、 SHALL 及 WILL ナル助働詞ノ正シキ使用法ハ主トシテ次ノ原則ニ據ル、

WILL ハ其主トナリタル事物ノ意思即ハテ適意ヲ表示ス、

SHALL ハ其主トナリタル事物ノ意思ヲ說話者ノ意思ニ服從セシム、

第一、 然レドモ慣例ハ此原則ヲ左ノ如ク變形シタリ、

甲、 第一人稱(主ガ說話者ナルトキ)ニ在テハ、 WILL 說話者ノ決心ヲ表示シ SH-

ALL ハ只々未然ヲ表示ス、

乙、 第二人稱(主ガ聽者ナルキ)並ビニ第三人稱(主ガ談柄者ナルトキ)ニ在テ、 WILL

ニテ用ユレバ說話者ガ自己ノ意思ヲ表定セルニシテ、 WILL ナテ用ユレバ說話者ガ自己

ノ意思ヲ察テ、他ニ讓レルナリ、或ハ又々單ニ未然ヲ表示ス、左例ノ如シ、

You (又ハ he) shall [我ハ君ガ何々ヲナスナランコトヲ欲スト言フ意]

You (又ハ he) will [我ハ君ノ意思ニ任ズト言フ意]

丙、 Shall ハ又々事情ガ主及說話者ノ權力外ニアルトキニモ用ユ、左例ノ如シ、

The Lord will come; the earth shall quake.

丁、 人ノ意思如何ヲ問糺スルニ當リ、 WILL ハ只第二人稱ニ用ユルヲ當然トス、例

之ハ、 shall I (又ハ he)? ト言ヘバ君ハ我が何々ヲナスナランコトヲ欲スルヤト云フ意ニ

シテ、 will you ト言ヘバ、是レハ君ノ欲スル所ナリヤト云フ意ナリ、

戊、 談話ヲ聞ク人ノ思想ヲ問フニ當リ、 WILL ハ第一人稱及第三人稱ニ用ヒ、 shall ハ

第二人稱ニ用ユルヲ得、例之ハ、 Which will I (又ハ he) chose? ト言ヘバ、我が何レヲ

撰バント欲スト君ハ考フルヤト言フ意ニシテ、 shall you be elected? ト言ヘバ、君ガ撰ハ

ルナラント君ハ考フルヤト言フ意ナリ、

第二、 前ニ掲ゲタル規則ハ偶發ノ事情及接續法ニ於ケル should 及 would ニモ適用

スベシ、

注、 shall 及 will ト should 及 would ニ於ケル精良ノ慣例ヲ規則中ニ概括スルコト殆ソ

ト困難ニシテ、寧ロ僅少ノ規則ヲ設クルヲ以テ勝レリトス、蓋シ英倫語ニ根據シテ處々ノ

土音ニ惑ハザル人等ハ此等助働詞ノ使用法ニ於ケル最良ノ標準タルベキ性ヲ具有ス、

第六、 時限式様之使用、

規則第六、 次ニ示ス原則ハ時ノ使用ニ關スル者ニシテ、格別ニ注目スベキ者ナリ、

第一、 不定法ヲ補足ニ取ル働詞ガ未來ノ動作若クハ事情ニ關係スル時ニ、現在不定辭

ヲ用ヒテ、完成不定辭ヲ用フベカラズ、其例左ノ如シ、

(一) I intended to write you last week [to have written to me & to you].  
(二) I expected to go to Europe [to have gone to Europe & to you].

茲ニ intended 及 expected ナル動詞ノ過去ニアレドモ、思ヒ掛ク事及ビ望ミタル事ハ未來ニ係ルナリ、

第二然レドモ不定辭ヲ補足トスル動詞ガ過去ノ動作若クハ事情ニ關係スル時ニハ、完成不定辭ヲ用ヒテ、現在不定辭ヲ用ユベカラズ、其例左ノ如シ、

He appeared to have seen better days.

第三、同一ノ動詞ニ付テニ若クハ二以上ノ時ヲ連接スルニキ時ニ、各時ニ通ゼザル各別ノ時限式様ヲ挿入セザル可カラズ、其例左ノ如シ、

This elucidation may serve almost any book that has, is, or shall be published. —  
Bolingbroke.

茲ニ Published ハ publish ナル動詞ノ過去分詞ニシ、テ正シク shall be ト共ニ用ヒラル、又タ is ト共ニ用フルモ其當ヲ得タリ、然レドモ has ト共ニ用フルハ其當ヲ得ズ、何トナレバ此文ノ作者ハ受働ノ現在完成時ヲ用ヒテ has been published ト言ハント欲セシヲ以テナリ、

第五、過去時ハ複合時ヲ構造スルニ用フベカラズ、又タ過去分詞ハ過去時ノ代リニ用フベカラズ、例之ハハ to have gone ト云フヲ得レドモ、to have went ト言フヲ得ズ、

又タ、I did it ト言フヲ得レドモ I done it ト言フヲ得ザルナリ、

### 第三篇 分拆 ANALYSIS.

#### 第一章 定義及原則

##### 第一款 文句及其成分

第二百一節 分拆 Analysis トハ文句ヲ其組成ノ成分ニ分カツテ云フ、

文詞論ト分拆トノ差別、及文章學ヲ組織スル大要ハ文詞論ノ首ニ示シタリ、

第二百三節 文句 Sentence トハ幾個ノ語ガ連續ニシテ、完全ナル思想ヲ表ハス者ナリ、次例ノ如シ、

(一) The proper study of mankind is man.

(二) I hear thee speak of the better land.

第一、文句トハ正式ニ從ヒテ思想ヲ表示セル者ナリ、問投詞モ實ニ思想ヲ表スルヲ得レドモ、其式様ヲ以テスレバ思想ヲ表シタリト言フベカラズ、故ニ亦タ文句ヲ組成セリト言フヲ得ズ、

第二、完全ナル思想ヲ表示ストハ(第一)言談ノ主トナルベキ某事物ヲ立テ(第二)此事物ニ關シテ某事情ヲ言フト云フ義ナリ、

第二百四節 文句ノ成分 Elements トハ文句ヲ組織スル成分ナリ、而シテ其等級、其結構、及其職任ニ關シテ之ガ考察ヲ爲スコトヲ得、等級ニ關シテ論ズ、第一、

第二百五節 文句ノ成分ヲ其等級ニ關シテ三種ニ分カツ第一、主要成分 PRINCIPAL ELEMENTS.

第二、羈屬成分 SUBORDINATE ELEMENTS. 第三、不羈成分 INDEPENDENT ELEMENTS. 是レナリ、

第二百六節 主要成分トハ思想ヲ表示スルニ必需ノ語ナリ、

第二百七節 羈屬成分トハ思想ガ多少變形セルコトヲ示サンガ爲メニ、主要成分ニ連結サレタル語ナリ、

第二百八節 文句ノ主要成分ヲ二類トス、第一ハ主ニシテ第二ハ講説ナリ、

第二百九節 主 Subject トハ某事情ヲ講説セララル、者ナリ、

第二百十節 講説 Predicate ハ主ノ事物ニ關シテ説キタル者ナリ、主及講

説ノ例左ノ如シ、

主	講	説
I Birds	sing	
II Some birds	sing	
III Some birds	sing	sweetly
IV Some birds of this country	sing	sweetly during the day

第二百十一節 繫屬語 Adjunct. 文句ノ羈屬成分ヲ名ケテ繫屬語一ニ變形語 Modifier ト云フ、

第一、 繫屬語ヲ主若クハ講説ニ附加スルトキ、主若クハ講説ハ變形セラレタリト云ヒ又々擴張セラレタリト云フ、而シテ主若クハ講説ノ變形 modification 若クハ擴張 enlargement ナル語ハ主若クハ講説ノ繫屬語若クハ變形語ト云フト同義ニ用フルコトヲ得、

第二、 前欄内ニ示シタル第二及第三ノ some ト、第四ノ some 及 of this country ト、ハ何レモ主ノ繫屬語即ハチ變形語ナリ、語ヲ代ヘテ言ヘハ主ノ擴張ナリ、又々第三ノ sweetly ト、第四ノ sweetly 及 during the day トハ共ニ講説ノ繫屬語ナリ、

第二百十二節 單純主 Simple subject 一名文法的的主 Grammatical subject トハ  
繫屬語ヲ有セザル主ナリ Birds fly swiftly ノ如シ

第二百十三節 完全主 Complete subject 一名論理的的主 Logical subject ト  
ハ繫屬語ヲ有スル主ナリ The proper study of mankind is man ノ如シ

論理的的主		論理的講說	
文法的的主	主之繫屬語		
study	The proper of predicate	is	man

第二百十四節 單純講說 Simple predicate 一名文法的的講說 Grammatical predi-  
cate トハ確說ヲ爲ニ用ヒラレタル働詞若クハ働詞熟語ナリ、次例ノ如シ、  
(一) Birds fly.

(一) Birds may *evah* *floun*.  
第二百十五節 完全講說 Complete predicate 一名論理的的講說 Logical predica-  
te トハ講說働詞ニ附屬スル補足若クハ繫屬語若クハ此二者ヲ有スル  
講說働詞ナリ、次例ヲ見ヨ、

論理的講說

(單純講說) (繫屬語) (補足) (繫屬語)  
Night STRETCHES (1) forth (2) her sceptre (3) o'er a prostrate world.

講說ノ補足(不完成働詞ノ場合ニ於テ講說ニ必要ナル者)ト單ニ繫屬語ト稱スベキ者ト  
ノ必要ノ差別ヲ注意セザルベカラズ、是ヲ以テ講說働詞ニ補足ヲ併セテ複合講說  
Complex Predicate ト稱シ、働詞ニ其補足及繫屬語ヲ併セテ論理的講說ト稱スルヲ以テ便  
利ナリトス、

第二百十六節 不羈成分トハ文句ノ他部ニ關係ナキ語若クハ熟語ナ  
リ、詳言スレバ主要成分ニモアラズ、羈屬成分ニモアラザル者ナリ、其  
例左ノ如シ、  
(一) To say the least, it was very surprising.



第二百二十二節 文句ノ成分ヲ其職任ニ關シテ、三種ニ分カテ第一ヲ實名 SUBSTANTIVE トシ、第二ヲ形容 ACJECTIVE トシ、第三ヲ副語 ADV-

ERBIAL WORD トス、

第二百二十三節 實名語若クハ實名熟語若クハ實名句トハ名詞ノ如クニ用ヒタル語若クハ熟語若クハ句ナリ、形容語若クハ形容熟語若クハ形容句トハ形容詞ノ如クニ用ヒタル語若クハ熟語若クハ句ナリ、副詞狀語若クハ副詞狀熟語若クハ副詞狀句トハ副詞ノ如クニ用ヒタル語若クハ熟語若クハ句ナリ、

成分ガ若シ一ノ語ナレバ、八品詞ノ一ニ依テ直チニ其職任ヲ決定スベシ、若シ其成分ガ熟語若クハ句ナル時ニハ、此熟語又ハ句ノ想像チ一語ニ縮メテ表スレバ八品詞ノ何レニ入ルベキ者トナルヤチ考ヘテ以テ其職任ヲ知ルベシ、

摘要

等級ニ關シテ成分タル成分、……………  
主要成分、  
出屬成分、  
不屬成分、

結構ニ關シテ成分タル成分、……………  
語、  
熟命、  
語、  
名、  
實形、  
名、  
客、  
副、  
狀、  
職任ニ關シテ成分タル成分……………

練習第五十、

甲、次ノ文句ヨリ文法的主及論理的主ト文法の講説及論理的講説ヲ抽出セヨ、

第一、 A thing of beauty is a joy forever.

〔美物ハ常に快樂ナル者ナリ〕

第二、 Chaucer, the father of English poetry, wrote the Canterbury Tales.

〔英倫詩學ノ元祖「チャウサー」ハ「カンターベリーテールズ」ヲ著作セリ〕

第三、 Brave soldiers fell at Thermopylae.

〔勇敢ノ兵士ハ「サーモピロン」ニ戰死ス〕

第四、 Tennyson wrote the Idylls of the King.

〔「テニソン」氏ハ王之足跡ヲ作シメリ〕

第五、 Nothing in his life became him like the leaving it.

〔彼ノ生命中其生命ヲ絶タントシタル者無ク〕

第六、 All the land, in flowery squares, beneath a broad and equal-blowing and wind, smelt of the coming summer.

〔夏ノ來ル緩風花壇ニ吹キ漸地香ヲ流ス〕

第七、 The morn, in russet mantle clad, Walks o'er the dew of you high eastern hill.

〔朝ハ淡暈ノ袈裟ヲ被リ、彼ノ東古ノ嶺ヲ踏ム〕

第八、 Short-lived likings may be bred By a glance from fickle eyes.

〔輕薄ナル人ト一時ノ快樂ヲ求ムルニ汲々トシ〕

第九、 Under her torn hat glowed the wealth Of simple beauty and rustic health.

〔彼女ノ破ントタル帽ノ下ニ純粹ノ美麗ト粗野ノ健康ノ富貴輝ク〕

第十、 Night, sable goddess, from her ebon throne, In rayless majesty now stretches forth Her leaden sceptre o'er a prostrate world.

〔暗黒女神ナル夜ハ其黒キ座ヨリ立ち、儼然タル容貌更ニ光輝ヲ放タズ、伏セル世界ノ上ニ大笏ヲ延バシ之ヲ蔽ヘリ〕

乙、 次例ニ於テ文句ヨリ熟語及句ヲ分別セヨ、

第一、 To die is gain.

〔死スルヲ利トス〕

第二、 Not to know me.

〔吾ヲ知ラザルコト〕

第三、 The design has never been completed.

〔企謀ハ決ン完全ナラザリシナリ〕

第四、 A design which has never been completed.

〔決シテ完全トセザル企謀〕

第五、 Sailing to Europe in a steamer.

〔火輪船ニ搭載シ、歐洲ニ趣ムナリ〕

第六、 The morn, in russet mantle clad.

〔朝ハ暗暈ノ袈裟ヲ被ラサントス〕

第七、 From bad to worse.

〔悪ヨリ更ニ悪リ〕

第八、 Snowdrifts.

〔雪岸〕

第九、 When morning showed the snow-drifts.

〔朝ハ雪岸ヲ表ハヌ時ニ〕



- 第十、 For conscience, sake.  
[良心ニ反ヘル爲メニ]
- 第十一、 Alas I poor Yorick.  
[嗚呼可憐ナル哉可憐ノ「ヨリック」也]
- 第十二、 When I knew him, Horatio.  
[「ホラチオ」ヨ、吾ガ彼ヲ知リシ時ニ]
- 第十三、 Remote from towns.  
[都市ヨリ遠ザカツテ]
- 第十四、 Go.  
[行ケ]
- 第十五、 Gone from our gaze.  
[吾人ノ注視ヨリ消去シテ]
- 第十六、 Does it matter?  
[斯クアルネキヤ]
- 第十七、 No.  
[否然ラズ]
- 第十八、 Into the jaws of death.

- 第十九、 Rode the Six hundred  
[六百ガ騎ンリ]
- 第二十、 Perish the thought!  
[思想ヲ抑ヘヨ]

第二款 文句之種類

第二百二十四節 分類方、文句ヲ分類スルニ二方アリ第一ハ其使用ニ關シ、第二ハ其結構ニ關ス、  
以下使用ニ關シテ論ズ第一、  
第二百二十五節 文句ヲ其使用ニ關シテ四種ニ分カツ第一、説明、  
DECLARATIVE. 第二、疑問、INTERROGATIVE. 第三、命令、IMPERATIVE. 第四、感動、  
EXCLAMATIVE (又 EXCLAMATORY 是レナリ、  
第二百二十六節 説明文句トハ確説(詳言スレハ認承若クハ否拒ナリ)ヲ表示スル文句ナリ、其例左ノ如シ、

(一) Man is mortal.  
 (二) Into the jaws of death rode the Six Hundred.  
 (三) If it were so, it were a grievous fault.  
 第二百二十七節 疑問文句トハ疑問ヲ表示スル文句ナリ、其例左ノ如シ、

(一) Is man mortal?  
 (二) Did the Six Hundred ride into the jaws of death?  
 第二百二十八節 命令文句トハ命令若クハ請願ヲ表示スル文句ナリ、其例左ノ如シ、

(一) Come when the heart beats high and warm.  
 (二) Put money in thy purse.  
 第二百二十九節 感動文句トハ間投詞ノ法ヲ以テ思想ヲ表示スル文句ナリ、其例左ノ如シ、

Oh! that this too solid flesh would melt!  
 次ニ勸告ナル者ハ「ベターリシ、ハンリー」(亞米利加獨立戰爭ノ時代ノ雄辯ナル愛國家ノ有名ナル演説ヨリ摘出シタル文ニシテ諸種ノ文句ヲ解明スルニ尤モ適當嘆美スルベキ者ナ

They tell us, sir, that we are weak—unable to cope with so formidable an adversary. But shall we be stronger? Will it be next week, or the next year? Shall we gather strength by irresolution and inaction? Sir, we are not weak, if we make a proper use of those means which the God of Nature hath placed in our power. The battle, sir, is not to the strong alone! it is to the vigilant, the active, the brave. If we were base enough to desire it, it is now too late to retire from the contest. The war is inevitable—and let it come. Our brethren are already in the field. Why stand we here idle? Is life so dear, or peace so sweet, as to be purchased at the price of chains and slavery? Forbid it, Almighty God! I know not what course others may take; but as for me, give me liberty, or give me death!

〔諸君ヨ、人ハ皆云フ吾人ハ懦弱ナリ、斯クノ剛敵ニ顔瀾スルノ力ナシト、嗟乎吾人が強トナルヲ得ルハ果シテ何時ソヤ、來日ナリヤ、來週ナリヤ將タ來來ニ在ルヤ否ヤ、嗚呼油々不斷ニシテ斯ノ氣力ヲ得ベシト思ヘルヤ、袖手傍觀シテ斯ノ強烈ヲ待ヘシト思ヘルヤ、諸君ヨ、吾人ハ斷シテ懦弱ニアラス、果シテ善ク天稟ノ大道ヲ踐ムニ於テハ何ノ懦弱カ之ニアラン、強ハ獨リ戰爭ニ存セズ、謹慎ニ存シ、活潑ニ存シ亦タ剛氣ニ存ス、假令吾人ハ全ク之ヲ企及スベカラザルモ、今ヤ戰爭ヲ止ムル、時期已ニ晚キニアラスヤ、戰爭斷シテ止ムベカラザルナリ、同胞已ニ戦地ニ在リ、吾人何ヲ以テ惰々トシテ茲ニ彷徨スルヤ、彼ノ奴隷トナツテ桎梏ヲ受クルニ生比スルニ、命何ソ價値アラン、平

和何ソ甘ンズベケン、否之ヲ止メヨヤ吾ガ全能ノ天道ヨ、假令諸君ハ何等ノ歩ヲ取ルトモ、吾ガ身一己ハ必ズヤ自由ヲ得ズンハ寧ロ死スベキナリ、

以下結構ヲ論ズ、第二、

第二百二十節 文句ハ其結構ニ關シテ三種トス、第一單純 SIMPLE

第二複合 COMPLEX 第三複雜 COMPOUND 是レナリ、

第二百二十一節 單純文句ハ一ノ不羈命題ヲ以テ成ル、

單純文句ハ只メ少シノ語ヲ以テ成ラザルベカラザルヲ思フベカラズ、假令其文句ノ主若クハ講説ニ如何ニ多クノ繫屬アルニモ拘ラズ、若シ其文句ガ只一ノ主及講説ヲ含ムトキハ、之ヲ單純文句トス、故ニ Birds fly ノ如クニ只二個ノ語ヲ含ム者モ單純文句ナレハ、次ニ示ス如クニ六十一語ヲ含ム者モ亦單純文句ナリ、

About fourscore years ago there used [單純講説] to be seen sauntering on the pleasant terraces of Sans Souci, for a short time in the afternoon, or driving in a rapid, business manner on the open roads, or through the seraggy woods and avenues of that intricate, amphibious Potsdam region, a highly interesting, lean, little old man [單純主] of alert, though slightly stooping figure.

第二百二十二節 複合文句トハ一ノ不羈命題ト一個若クハ一個以上

ノ係句トヲ以テ成ル者ナリ、其例左ノ如シ

(一) When morning dawned [係句] ALL FEARS WERE DISPELLED [主與命題]

(二) WE KNOW NOT [主與命題] whence it comes [係句] 又、whither it goes [係句]

第二百二十三節 複雜文句トハ二個若クハ二個以上ノ不羈命題ヲ以テ成ル者ナリ、其例左ノ如シ、

[All fears were dispelled], AND [we saw the land within a few leagues of us].

複雑文句ニ在テハ支句ヲ單ニ集合スルノミナレドモ、複合文句ニアツテハ、之ヲ互ニ編ミ合ハセリ、

### 第三款 主及講説

第二百三十四節 文句ノ主ハ常ニ名詞ナルカ、若クハ名詞ノ價ヲ有スル者ナリ、

名詞ノ價ヲ有スル者左ノ如シ、  
其一、名詞、

例、 *She is all the world to me.*

其二、 實名詞ニ用ビラレタル形容詞、

例、 *The weary are at rest.*

其三、 不定辭若シハゼラント、

例、(一) *To be contents his natural desire*

(二) *Seeing is believing.*

其四、 實名熟語、

例、(一) *Not to know me argues yourself unknown.*

(二) *Learning a language well is difficult.*

其五、 實名句、

例、 *That the earth is spherical was not known by the Greeks.*

第二百二十五節 講説ハ講説動詞(一語又ハ數語)ヨリ成ル、然レドモ完

成ノ説話ヲ爲サンガ爲メニハ補足ヲ用ヒザル可カラザルト屢ナリ、

第二百二十六節 補足、他動詞ハ補足ニ目的ヲ要ス、次例ノ如シ、

(講説動詞) (四例)

*Columbus discovered America.*

動詞ノ目的ハ名詞ノ價ヲ有スル者ノ何レノ一タルモ可ナリ、左例ヲ見ヨ、

(一) *We commend per.*

(二) *Men honor the brave.*

(三) *Boys like to skate.*

(四) *They stopped reciving lessons.*

(五) *Falleyrand said that the purpose of language is to conceal thought.*

第二百二十七節 不完成ノ自動詞及受動詞ハ講説主格若クハ講説形

容詞ヲ補足トスルコトヲ得其例左ノ如シ、

(一) *Knowledge is power.*

(二) *The mountains are high.*

(三) *She seems better.*

(四) *Socrates was thought wise.*

自動詞若シハ受動詞ノ補足ハ名詞ノ同價若シハ形容詞ノ同價ナルコトヲ得、左例ノ如シ、

(一) *His intention was to go.*